## Estimation and inference of FAVAR models

Bai, Jushan and Li, Kunpeng and Lu, Lina
Columbia University, Capital University of Economics and Business, Columbia University

December 2014

Online at https://mpra.ub.uni-muenchen.de/60960/
MPRA Paper No. 60960, posted 27 Dec 2014 05:57 UTC

# Estimation and inference of FAVAR models 

Jushan $\mathrm{Bai}^{*}$ Kunpeng $\mathrm{Li}^{\dagger}$ and Lina $\mathrm{Lu}^{\ddagger}$

December 27, 2014


#### Abstract

The factor-augmented vector autoregressive (FAVAR) model, first proposed by Bernanke, Bovin, and Eliasz (2005, QJE), is now widely used in macroeconomics and finance. In this model, observable and unobservable factors jointly follow a vector autoregressive process, which further drives the comovement of a large number of observable variables. We study the identification restrictions in the presence of observable factors. We propose a likelihood-based two-step method to estimate the FAVAR model that explicitly accounts for factors being partially observed. We then provide an inferential theory for the estimated factors, factor loadings and the dynamic parameters in the VAR process. We show how and why the limiting distributions are different from the existing results.


Key Words: high dimensional analysis; identification restrictions; inferential theory; likelihood-based analysis; VAR; impulse response.

[^0]
## 1 Introduction

Since the seminal work of Sims (1980), vector autoregressive (VAR) models have played an important role in macroeconomic analysis. Because the number of parameters in a VAR system increases rapidly with the number of variables, there is a degree-of-freedom problem when too many variables are included in the system. On the other hand, too few variables may not fully capture the dimension of the structural shocks. These problems may explain some puzzling empirical results in the body of VAR research. For example, various studies commonly find that a contractionary monetary policy often leads to an increase of the price level, rather than a decrease as the standard economic theory alleges (see Sims (1992) and Christiano, Eichenbaum and Evans (1999)). Sims (1992) proposes a plausible interpretation of this puzzle, suggesting that it results from the VAR analysis not fully capturing the information. Including more series in a VAR model is limited because of the loss of degrees of freedom. ${ }^{1}$ Furthermore, as Stock and Watson (2005) point out, it is doubtful that the larger VAR models with some potentially incredible restrictions would be superior to the smaller ones.

Bernanke, Boivin and Eliasz (2005) propose a factor-augmented vector autoregressive (FAVAR) model to address the dilemma arising from the information deficiency and the degree-of-freedom problem in traditional VAR models. In contrast with such models, the FAVAR model includes unobserved low-dimensional factors in the autoregression. These factors, which may not be captured by some specific macroeconomic aggregates, are thought to contain the bulk of information about an economy. With inclusion of these unobserved factors, the FAVAR model is of rich information, but remains tractable in terms of the number of parameters, owing to the low dimension of the factors. The FAVAR model is now widely used in economic applications. ${ }^{2}$ Despite its wide applicability, important issues remain to be addressed.

We first derive the number of restrictions needed in the presence of observable factors, and then consider how to impose these restrictions. Two types of restrictions may be considered. One type involves restrictions on the sample moments of factor process, the other involves restrictions on the population moments of the factor process. The first type is more appropriate for factors being a sequence of fixed constants, e.g., Bai and Li (2012a). The second type is more appropriate for factors being a random sequence. Similar issue was discussed by Anderson (2003, page 571). In FAVAR models, since the factors are stochastic processes, restrictions on population variance are more reasonable

[^1]than on sample variance. An important result of this paper is that the two types of restrictions, although asymptotically equivalent, lead to different limiting distributions for the estimated factors and factor loadings, as well as different limiting distributions for the estimated parameters in the VAR process.

The second issue is estimation and the related inferential theory. In the FAVAR literature, Bernanke, Boivin and Eliasz (2005) and Boivin, Giannoni and Mihov (2009) suggest a two-step method to estimate a FAVAR model, in which the factors are extracted first and their dynamics are estimated next. There are no studies on the inferential theory of the FAVAR model. The deficiency in this respect makes it difficult to construct the confidence intervals for the impulse response function and to interpret the subsequent economic analysis. Possibly for this reason, Bernanke, Boivin and Eliasz (2005) also consider a bayesian method to estimate the model. However, the burdensome computation procedure of the Markov chain Monte Carlo (MCMC) method in this context is formidable for many researchers.

In this paper, we consider the identification, estimation, and inferential theory of the FAVAR models. We contribute to the FAVAR literature in several ways. First, we investigate the identification problem of the FAVAR model. Due to the presence of partially observable factors, the identification problem here differs from those in standard factor models. We consider three sets of identification conditions. Unlike the usual identification conditions that are imposed on the sample variance of factors, we put the conditions on the variance of innovations to factors. These conditions are similar to those in the standard structural VAR literature. Second, we propose a likelihood-based two-step method to estimate the FAVAR model, which explicitly takes into account of partial factors being observed. Using maximum likelihood (ML) method instead of principal components (PC) method in the first step gives a better estimation of unobserved factors. ${ }^{3}$ In addition, we find that the iterative estimation procedure advocated by Boivin, Giannoni and Mihov (2009) can be avoided. Third, we establish the statistical theory of the two-step estimators including consistency, convergence rates, and the asymptotic representations. We also give an inferential theory for the impulse response functions. Based on this theory, the confidence intervals of the impulse response function can be easily constructed.

There are several studies related to our work. Stock and Watson (2005) consider the identification and estimation issues in the dynamic factor models. Their identification strategies share with ours the same feature that partial conditions are imposed on the variance of innovations. But the remaining conditions are different: their conditions are imposed on the vector moving average representation and ours are imposed on the original factor representation. Which identification strategy is preferred depends on specific applications. Bernanke, Boivin and Eliasz (2005) suggest a timing-exclusion strategy for

[^2]identification. Their strategy may lead to over-identification. Han (2014) proposes a statistic to test the over-identification restrictions. There are additional studies considering the bootstrap method to construct confidence intervals for factor-augmented models, such as Goncalves and Perron (2014), Shintani and Guo (2011), Yamamoto (2011). Our theoretical results also pave ways for future studies in this direction.

The rest of the paper is arranged as follows. Section 2 introduces the FAVAR model with its identification problem, and examines three sets of identification restrictions; and presents some regularity conditions. Section 3 states our two-step estimation procedures. Section 4 presents all the asymptotic properties of our estimators. Section 5 focuses the impulse response function and its confidence intervals. Section 6 investigates the finite sample properties of our estimators. Section 7 concludes. Technical proofs are delivered in the appendix. Throughout the paper, the norm of a vector or matrix is that of Frobenius, that is, $\|A\|=\sqrt{\left[\operatorname{tr}\left(A^{\prime} A\right)\right]}$ for vector or matrix $A$.

## 2 The FAVAR models

Let $g_{t}$ be a vector of observable factors, and $f_{t}$ be a vector of latent factors, both of low dimension. The FAVAR model assumes that $g_{t}$ and $f_{t}$ jointly follow a VAR process. That is, let $h_{t}=\left(f_{t}^{\prime}, g_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}$, then $h_{t}$ is characterized by a $\operatorname{VAR}(K)$ process for some $K$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{t}=\Phi_{1} h_{t-1}+\Phi_{2} h_{t-2}+\cdots+\Phi_{K} h_{t-K}+u_{t} \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

In general, neither $f_{t}$ nor $g_{t}$ alone is a finite order VAR process. The FAVAR model further assumes that a large number of observable variables $z_{t}=\left(z_{1 t}, z_{2 t}, \ldots, z_{N t}\right)^{\prime}$, dimension of $N \times 1$, is affected by $h_{t}$ through a factor model

$$
z_{t}=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
\Lambda & \Gamma
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{l}
f_{t}  \tag{2.2}\\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]+e_{t}
$$

where $\Lambda$ and $\Gamma$ are the factor loadings with $\Lambda=\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{N}\right)^{\prime}$ and $\Gamma=\left(\gamma_{1}, \ldots, \gamma_{N}\right)^{\prime}$, and $e_{t}=\left(e_{1 t}, e_{2 t} \ldots, e_{N T}\right)^{\prime}$ is the idiosyncratic error. Throughout, we assume $f_{t}$ is of dimension $r_{1} \times 1, g_{t}$ of $r_{2} \times 1$ and $h_{t}$ of $r=r_{1}+r_{2}$. We consider estimating the factors $\left(f_{t}\right)$ and factor loadings, the variance of the idiosyncratic errors $e_{i t}$, and the dynamic parameters in the $h_{t}$ process, and derive their limiting distributions under various identification restrictions.

Model (2.1)-(2.2) is the FAVAR model proposed by Bernanke, Boivin and Eliasz (2005). Equation (2.1) is a standard specification of $\operatorname{VAR}(K)$ model, except that the variables $f_{t}$ are unobservable. The inclusion of unobservable factors is crucial to the FAVAR model. These unobservable factors usually capture the information of some structural shocks that are important to the economy but cannot be well represented by specific macroeconomic aggregates. As mentioned before, omitting unknown structure shocks may be a primary reason for the failure of the traditional VAR model in some empirical applications. Equation (2.2) specifies that the common factors $h_{t}$ are related to the observable
data $z_{t}$ by a factor model. This approach is a plausible way to model the relation between observable variables $z_{t}$ and the latent variable $f_{t}$, given the diffusion nature of common shocks in $h_{t}$. The FAVAR model can be considered as a special case of Forni et al. (2000), but with more structures.

### 2.1 The number of identification restrictions needed

Model (2.1)-(2.2) cannot be fully identified without additional restrictions. To see this, for any invertible $r_{1} \times r_{1}$ matrix $M_{11}$ and $r_{1} \times r_{2}$ matrix $M_{12}$, the model can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{t}=\Lambda f_{t}+\Gamma g_{t}+e_{t}=\underbrace{\left(\Lambda M_{11}\right)}_{\Lambda^{*}} \underbrace{\left(M_{11}^{-1} f_{t}-M_{11}^{-1} M_{12} g_{t}\right)}_{f_{t}^{*}}+\underbrace{\left(\Gamma+\Lambda M_{12}\right)}_{\Gamma^{*}} g_{t}+e_{t} . \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then we obtain two observably equivalent models. Since the total number of free parameters of $M_{11}$ and $M_{12}$ is $r_{1}^{2}+r_{1} r_{2}$, we need at least $r_{1}^{2}+r_{1} r_{2}$ restrictions to identity parameters. A subsequent question is whether $r_{1}^{2}+r_{1} r_{2}$ restrictions are enough. To answer this question, we first define some notations for ease of exposition. Let

$$
F=\left(f_{1}, f_{2}, \ldots, f_{T}\right)^{\prime}, \quad G=\left(g_{1}, g_{2}, \ldots, g_{T}\right)^{\prime}, \quad H=\left(h_{1}, h_{2}, \ldots, h_{T}\right)^{\prime}=[F, G] .
$$

The following proposition shows that the preceding question has a definite answer.
Proposition 2.1 Suppose that $H$ is of full column rank, the number of restrictions needed to fully identify model (2.2)-(2.1) is ( $r_{1}^{2}+r_{1} r_{2}$ ).

Proof. Let $M$ be any invertible $r \times r$ rotation matrix, partitioned as

$$
M=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
M_{11} & M_{12} \\
M_{21} & M_{22}
\end{array}\right]
$$

where $M_{11}, M_{22}$ are $r_{1} \times r_{1}$ and $r_{2} \times r_{2}$ square matrices, respectively. Then equation (2.2) can be written as

$$
z_{t}=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
\Lambda & \Gamma
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{l}
f_{t} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]+e_{t}=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
\Lambda & \Gamma
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{ll}
M_{11} & M_{12} \\
M_{21} & M_{22}
\end{array}\right]^{-1}\left[\begin{array}{ll}
M_{11} & M_{12} \\
M_{21} & M_{22}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{l}
f_{t} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]+e_{t} .
$$

Let $h_{t}^{\dagger}=M h_{t}$. If $M$ is a qualified rotation matrix, the lower $r_{2}$ elements of $h_{t}^{\dagger}$ should be $g_{t}$. This gives

$$
\left[\begin{array}{c}
f_{t}^{\dagger} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
M_{11} & M_{12} \\
M_{21} & M_{22}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{c}
f_{t} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right],
$$

implying $g_{t}=M_{21} f_{t}+M_{22} g_{t}$, or equivalently

$$
\left[\begin{array}{ll}
M_{21} & \left(M_{22}-I_{r_{2}}\right)
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{l}
f_{t} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]=0
$$

for $t=1,2, \ldots, T$. The above result is equivalent to

$$
\left[\begin{array}{ll}
M_{21} & \left.\left(M_{22}-I_{r_{2}}\right)\right] H^{\prime}=0 .
\end{array}\right.
$$

If $H$ is of full column rank, by post-multiplying $H\left(H^{\prime} H\right)^{-1}$, we have $M_{21}=0, M_{22}=$ $I_{r_{2}}$. This result indicates that, to fully identify the parameters, we only need to uniquely determine the matrix $M_{11}$ and $M_{12}$, whose number of free parameters is exactly $r_{1}^{2}+r_{1} r_{2}$. This proves the proposition.

### 2.2 Identification restrictions

The identification problem brings advantages and disadvantage to the FAVAR model. On one hand, it causes difficulties in interpreting the model in a universal way; on the other hand, the model has flexibility to fit specific situations through a careful design of the identification strategy. In what follows, we consider three sets of identification restrictions, which we think are of practical relevance. We first introduce the following notations:

$$
\begin{align*}
& u_{t}=\left[\begin{array}{l}
\varepsilon_{t} \\
\boldsymbol{v}_{t}
\end{array}\right] ; \quad \Omega=E\left(u_{t} u_{t}^{\prime}\right)=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
E\left(\varepsilon_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}\right) & E\left(\varepsilon_{\boldsymbol{t}} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\prime}\right) \\
E\left(\boldsymbol{v}_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}\right) & E\left(\boldsymbol{v}_{t} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\prime}\right)
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon} & \Omega_{\varepsilon \boldsymbol{v}} \\
\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v \varepsilon}} & \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v}}
\end{array}\right]  \tag{2.4}\\
& h_{t}=\left[\begin{array}{l}
f_{t} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right] ; \quad \boldsymbol{\Delta}=E\left(h_{t} h_{t}^{\prime}\right)=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
E\left(f_{t} f_{t}^{\prime}\right) & E\left(f_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right) \\
E\left(g_{t} f_{t}^{\prime}\right) & E\left(g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f} & \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \\
\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} & \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}
\end{array}\right]
\end{align*}
$$

where $\varepsilon_{t}$ and $\boldsymbol{v}_{t}$ are the innovations corresponding to $f_{t}$ and $g_{t}$ respectively. We consider the following three sets of identification restrictions.
IRa The underlying parameter values $\theta$ satisfy: $\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}=I_{r_{1}}, \Omega_{\varepsilon v}=0$ and $\frac{1}{N} \Lambda^{\prime} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda=Q$, where $Q$ is a diagonal matrix with its diagonal elements being distinct and arranged in descending order.

IRb The underlying parameter values $\theta$ satisfy: $\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}=I_{r_{1}}, \Omega_{\varepsilon v}=0$ and $\Lambda_{1}$ is a lower triangular matrix, where $\Lambda_{1}$ is the upper $r_{1} \times r_{1}$ submatrix of $\Lambda$.
IRc The underlying parameter values $\theta$ satisfy: $\Omega_{\varepsilon v}=0$ and $\Lambda_{1}=I_{r_{1}}$, where $\Lambda_{1}$ is the upper $r_{1} \times r_{1}$ submatrix of $\Lambda$.

Each set of identification restrictions imposes $r_{1}^{2}+r_{1} r_{2}$ restrictions. There are no restrictions on $\Omega_{v v}$ as $\boldsymbol{v}_{t}$ is the reduced form residual from the observable $g_{t}$. In the next subsection, we explain why it is possible to assume $\Omega_{\varepsilon v}=0$.

Remark 2.1 In factor analysis, Anderson (2003, page 571) considers both types of restrictions $E\left(f_{t} f_{t}^{\prime}\right)=I_{r_{1}}$ and $\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t} f_{t}^{\prime}=I_{r_{1}}$. The former restriction is considered population restriction, and the latter is considered sample version restriction. In our case, since we have dynamics in $h_{t}$, the errors $\varepsilon_{t}$ correspond to $f_{t}$. Because we assume the errors are random, it is reasonable to make populational assumptions rather than sample version restrictions. However, as we will show, though $E\left(\varepsilon_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}\right)=I_{r_{1}}$ and $\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \varepsilon_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}=I_{r_{1}}$ are asymptotically equivalent, they imply different distributions for the estimated factor loadings and the estimated factors $f_{t}$. The population version restriction implies larger variance than the sample version restriction.

### 2.3 Discussions on the identification restrictions

We give some discussions on the preceding identification restrictions, especially the reason that we can impose the restriction $\Omega_{\varepsilon v}=0$. Suppose the original FAVAR model is

$$
\begin{aligned}
& z_{t}=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
\Lambda^{\dagger} & \Gamma^{\dagger}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{c}
f_{t}^{\dagger} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]+e_{t}, \\
& h_{t}^{\dagger}=\Phi_{1}^{\dagger} h_{t-1}^{\dagger}+\Phi_{2}^{\dagger} h_{t-2}^{\dagger}+\cdots+\Phi_{K}^{\dagger} h_{t-K}^{\dagger}+u_{t}^{\dagger}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $h_{t}^{\dagger}=\left[\begin{array}{c}f_{t}^{\dagger} \\ g_{t}\end{array}\right]$ and $u_{t}^{\dagger}=\left[\begin{array}{c}\varepsilon_{t}^{\dagger} \\ \boldsymbol{v}_{t}\end{array}\right]$ with the variance matrix $\Omega^{\dagger}=E\left(u_{t}^{\dagger} u_{t}^{\dagger \prime}\right)=\left[\begin{array}{ll}\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}^{\dagger} & \Omega_{\varepsilon v}^{\dagger} \\ \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}^{\dagger} & \Omega_{v \boldsymbol{v}}\end{array}\right]$. Note that this original VAR representation is in a reduced form with $\Omega_{v \varepsilon}^{\dagger} \neq 0$. Let $A$ be a rotation matrix defined as $A=\left[\begin{array}{cc}\left(\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v}^{\dagger}\right)^{-1 / 2} & -\left(\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v}^{\dagger}\right)^{-1 / 2} \Omega_{\varepsilon v}^{\dagger} \Omega_{v v}^{-1} \\ 0 & I_{r_{2}}\end{array}\right]$, then the new FAVAR model after rotation is

$$
\begin{aligned}
z_{t} & =\underbrace{\left[\begin{array}{ll}
\Lambda^{\dagger} & \Gamma^{\dagger}
\end{array} A^{-1}\right.}_{\left[\begin{array}{ll}
\Lambda & \Gamma
\end{array}\right]} \cdot \underbrace{A\left[\begin{array}{c}
f_{t}^{\dagger} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]}_{\left[\begin{array}{c}
f_{t} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right] \equiv h_{t}}+e_{t}, \\
\underbrace{A h_{t}^{\dagger}}_{h_{t}} & =\underbrace{A \Phi_{1}^{\dagger} A^{-1}}_{\Phi_{1}} \cdot \underbrace{A h_{t-1}^{\dagger}}_{h_{t-1}}+\underbrace{A \Phi_{2}^{\dagger} A^{-1}}_{\Phi_{2}} \cdot \underbrace{A h_{t-2}^{\dagger}}_{h_{t-2}}+\cdots+\underbrace{A \Phi_{K}^{\dagger} A^{-1}}_{\Phi_{K}} \cdot \underbrace{A h_{t-K}^{\dagger}}_{h_{t-K}}+\underbrace{A u_{t}^{\dagger}}_{u_{t}}
\end{aligned}
$$

where we use the notation without $\dagger$ to denote the new parameters. Note that the observable factor $g_{t}$ and the corresponding innovation $\boldsymbol{v}_{t}$ do not change. Let $\Omega$ be the variance matrix of the new innovation $u_{t}=\left[\begin{array}{c}\varepsilon_{t} \\ \boldsymbol{v}_{t}\end{array}\right]$, then $\Omega=A \Omega^{\dagger} A^{\prime}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}I_{r_{1}} & 0 \\ 0 & \Omega_{v v}\end{array}\right]$, where the new innovations satisfy $\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}=I_{r_{1}}$ and $\Omega_{\varepsilon v}=0$. Consequently our imposed identification restrictions on the innovations as stated in the previous subsection are reasonable. The new factor $f_{t}=\left(\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v}^{\dagger}\right)^{-1 / 2} f_{t}^{\dagger}-\left(\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v}^{\dagger}\right)^{-1 / 2} \Omega_{\varepsilon \boldsymbol{v}}^{\dagger} \Omega_{v \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1} g_{t}$ is now a linear combination of $f_{t}^{\dagger}$ and $g_{t}$. With some appropriate restrictions on the new loadings $\left[\begin{array}{ll}\Lambda & \Gamma\end{array}\right]$, the factor $f_{t}$ can now have economic meanings with additional identification restrictions.

The three different identification restrictions in the previous subsection can be interpreted as follows.

IRa requires that $\Lambda^{\prime} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda$ be diagonal, which is often used in the maximum likelihood estimation, see Lawley and Maxwell (1971). This identification condition is important in terms of the statistical analysis, it can also be of economic interest in some specific cases, as pointed out in Bai and Ng (2013). For example, $\Lambda$ is block diagonal such as $\Lambda=\left[\pi_{1}, 0 ; 0, \pi_{2}\right]$, where $\pi_{i}$ is a vector (or matrix) of $N_{i}$ elements with $N_{1}+N_{2}=N$. In this case, the first factor only affects the first $N_{1}$ variables, and the second factor only affects the next $N_{2}$ variables. Each variable is affected by only a single factor, but we do not need to know which variable is affected by which factor; we have $\Lambda^{\prime} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda$ being diagonal under arbitrary cross-sectional permutation of individuals.

IRb shares the same feature with IRa by imposing the restrictions on the variance of $u_{t}$. In addition, it restricts $\Lambda_{1}$ to being a lower triangular matrix. This allows IRb to endow economic implications with the unobserved factors. Under IRb, only the first unobservable factor affects the first variable, the first two unobservable factors affect the second variable, etc. This scheme somewhat resembles the recursive identification in structural VAR analysis. Through careful selection of the first $r_{1}$ variables, the unobservable factors are now explainable.

IRc restricts the upper $r_{1} \times r_{1}$ matrix to being an identity matrix. Since more restrictions are imposed on the factor loadings $\Lambda$, IRc relinquishes the requirement that the innovations to the unobservable factors be orthogonal and have unit variance. Under IRc, the first unobservable factor affects only the first series, the second unobservable factor affects only the second series, etc.

Overall, the identification restrictions considered in this paper share the feature that they impose restrictions on the loadings $\Lambda$ and the variance of the innovations to $h_{t}$. This is in contrast with the usual identification conditions in factor models, which impose restrictions on the loadings and the sample variance of factors; see Anderson and Rubin (1956) and Bai and Li (2012a) for traditional identification conditions. Imposing restrictions on innovations instead on factors themselves is important and reasonable because the components of $f_{t}$ are correlated while the innovations $\varepsilon_{t}$ can be assumed uncorrelated, similar to structural analysis.

### 2.4 Assumptions

To analyze model (2.2)-(2.1), we make the following assumptions:

Assumption A. The factor $h_{t}=\left(f_{t}^{\prime}, g_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}$ admits a VAR representation (2.1), where $u_{t}$ is an i.i.d process with $E\left(u_{t}\right)=0, \operatorname{var}\left(u_{t}\right)=\Omega>0$ and $E\left(\left\|u_{t}\right\|^{4}\right)<\infty$. In addition, all the roots of the polynomial $\Phi(L)=I_{r}-\Phi_{1} L-\Phi_{2} L^{2}-\cdots-\Phi_{K} L^{K}=0$ are outside of the unit circle.
Assumption B. There exists a positive constant $C$ large enough such that
B. $1\left\|\lambda_{i}\right\| \leq C<\infty,\left\|\gamma_{i}\right\| \leq C<\infty$.
B. $2 C^{-2} \leq \sigma_{i}^{2} \leq C^{2}$ for all $i$.
B. $3 \lim _{N \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{N} \Lambda^{\prime} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda=\mathbf{Q}$ exists and is a positive-definite matrix, where $\Sigma_{e e}$ is defined in Assumption C.
Assumption C. $E\left(e_{t}\right)=0 ; E\left(e_{t} e_{t}^{\prime}\right)=\Sigma_{e e}=\operatorname{diag}\left(\sigma_{1}^{2}, \sigma_{2}^{2}, \ldots, \sigma_{N}^{2}\right) ; E\left(e_{i t}^{4}\right)<\infty$ for all $i$ and $t$. The $e_{i t}$ are independent over $i$ and $t$. The $N \times 1$ vector $e_{t}$ is identically distributed over $t$. Furthermore, $e_{i t}$ is independent with $u_{s}$ for all $i, t, s$.

Assumption D. Variances $\sigma_{i}^{2}$ are estimated in the compact set $\left[C^{-2}, C^{2}\right]$.
Assumption A makes the regularity conditions on factors. It requires factor $h_{t}$ to be stationery over $t$. It also guarantees that $H=\left(h_{1}, h_{2}, \ldots, h_{T}\right)^{\prime}$ is of full column rank. So under Assumption A, Proposition 2.1 holds. Assumption B is made on the factor loadings. This assumption is standard. Notice that Assumption B requires the columns of $\Lambda$ to be linearly independent; otherwise, $\mathbf{Q}$ will be a singular matrix. Assumption $\mathbf{C}$ centers on the idiosyncratic errors. Under Assumption C, the correlations over time and cross section are ruled out. Meanwhile, the heteroscedasticity over time is also precluded. This assumption can be relaxed to a great extent. In fact, the analysis of this paper can be extended to the approximate factor models (Chamberlain and Rothschild (1983)). Assumption D requires $\sigma_{i}^{2}$ to be estimated in a compact set. This assumption is due to the high nonlinearity of the likelihood function, and it is common in the literature for nonlinear problems.

## 3 Estimation

In this section, we propose a two-step method to estimate the underlying structure parameters that satisfy IRa, IRb, or IRc. Some alternative methods can also be used. Bernanke, Boivin and Eliasz (2005) consider the MCMC method. Boivin, Giannoni and Mihov (2009) consider the iterated PC-OLS method. Our method directly takes into account that $g_{t}$ is observable, no iteration is necessary. Also, the MLE-based method is more efficient than that of PC-based.

To gain insight into our method, write (2.2) into matrix form as

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z=\Lambda F^{\prime}+\Gamma G^{\prime}+e \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Post-multiplying $\mathbb{M}_{G}=I_{T}-G\left(G^{\prime} G\right)^{-1} G$, we have

$$
Z \mathbb{M}_{G}=\Lambda F^{\prime} \mathbb{M}_{G}+e \mathbb{M}_{G}
$$

Applying the quasi maximum likelihood (ML) estimation method to the model, we obtain the QMLE $\tilde{\Lambda}, \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}$ and $\tilde{F}$. Let $f_{t}^{\star}=R_{11}\left(f_{t}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} g_{t}\right)$, where $R_{11}$ is a rotation matrix. It can be shown that $\tilde{f}_{t}$ consistently estimate $f_{t}^{\star}$. To recover $f_{t}$ from $f_{t}^{\star}$ and $g_{t}$, we only need to determine $\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g}$ and $R_{11}$, which is achieved by our identification conditions.

The estimation method is formally stated as follows:

1. Apply quasi ML method with $Y=Z \mathbb{M}_{G}$ to get quasi ML estimates (QMLE) $\tilde{\lambda}_{i}, \tilde{\sigma}_{i}^{2}$; then calculate $\tilde{F}=Y^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\left(\tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\right)^{-1}$ and $\tilde{\Gamma}=\left(Z-\tilde{\Lambda} \tilde{F}^{\prime}\right) G\left(G^{\prime} G\right)^{-1}$, where $\tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}=$ $\operatorname{diag}\left(\tilde{\sigma}_{1}^{2}, \ldots, \tilde{\sigma}_{N}^{2}\right)$.
2. Let $\tilde{h}_{t}=\left(\tilde{f}_{t}^{\prime}, g_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}$ and run the following regression

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{h}_{t}=\Phi_{1} \tilde{h}_{t-1}+\Phi_{2} \tilde{h}_{t-2}+\cdots+\Phi_{K} \tilde{h}_{t-K}+\text { error } \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

to get the estimator $\tilde{\Phi}_{1}, \tilde{\Phi}_{2}, \ldots, \tilde{\Phi}_{K}$.
3. Let $\tilde{u}_{t}$ be the residuals of the regression (3.2). Calculate $\tilde{\Omega}=\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{u}_{t} \tilde{u}_{t}^{\prime}$, where $\bar{T}=T-K$ and $\bar{K}=K+1$. Then $\tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}, \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon v}$ and $\tilde{\Omega}_{v v}$ are obtained by the definition. Calculate $\tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v}=\tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}-\tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon v} \tilde{\Omega}_{v v}^{-1} \tilde{\Omega}_{v \varepsilon}$.
4. Estimation under IRa: Let $\mathcal{V}$ be the eigenvector matrix of $\tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot \boldsymbol{v}}^{1 / 2}\left(\frac{1}{N} \tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\right) \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot \boldsymbol{v}}^{1 / 2}$, whose associated eigenvalues are in descending order. Calculate $\hat{\Lambda}=\tilde{\Lambda} \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v}^{1 / 2} \mathcal{V}, \tilde{\Gamma}+$ $\tilde{\Lambda} \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon v} \tilde{\Omega}_{v v}^{-1}, \hat{F}=\left(\tilde{F}-G \tilde{\Omega}_{v v}^{-1} \tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}\right) \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1 / 2} \mathcal{V}$. Further construct $R$ as

$$
R=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\mathcal{V}^{\prime} \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v}^{-1 / 2} & -\mathcal{V}^{\prime} \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v}^{-1 / 2} \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon v} \tilde{\Omega}_{v v}^{-1} \\
0 & I_{r_{2}}
\end{array}\right] .
$$

Then $\hat{\Phi}_{p}=R \tilde{\Phi}_{p} R^{-1}$ for $p=1,2, \ldots, K$, and $\hat{\Omega}_{v v}=\tilde{\Omega}_{v v}$.
Estimation under IRb: Let $\tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot \boldsymbol{v}}^{1 / 2} \tilde{\Lambda}_{1}^{\prime}=\mathcal{Q R}$ be the QR decomposition of $\tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot \boldsymbol{v}}^{1 / 2} \tilde{\Lambda}_{1}^{\prime}$ with $\mathcal{Q}$ an orthogonal matrix and $\mathcal{R}$ an upper triangular matrix, where $\tilde{\Lambda}_{1}$ is the upper $r_{1} \times r_{1}$ submatrix of $\tilde{\Lambda}$. The parameters are estimated by $\hat{\Lambda}=\tilde{\Lambda} \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v}^{1 / 2} \mathcal{Q}$, $\hat{\Gamma}=\tilde{\Lambda} \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon v} \tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1}+\tilde{\Gamma}, \hat{F}=\left(\tilde{F}-G \tilde{\Omega}_{v \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1} \tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}\right) \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v}^{-1 / 2} \mathcal{Q}$. Let

$$
R=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\mathcal{Q}^{\prime} \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v}^{-1 / 2} & -\mathcal{Q}^{\prime} \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v}^{-1 / 2} \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon v} \tilde{\Omega}_{v v}^{-1} \\
0 & I_{r_{2}}
\end{array}\right] .
$$

Then $\hat{\Phi}_{p}=R \tilde{\Phi}_{p} R^{-1}$ for $p=1,2, \ldots, K$, and $\hat{\Omega}_{v v}=\tilde{\Omega}_{v v}$.
Estimation under IRc: The parameters are estimated by $\hat{\Lambda}=\tilde{\Lambda}\left(\tilde{\Lambda}_{1}\right)^{-1}, \hat{\Gamma}=\tilde{\Gamma}+$ $\tilde{\Lambda} \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon v} \tilde{\Omega}_{v v}^{-1}$ and $\hat{F}=\left(\tilde{F}-G \tilde{\Omega}_{v v}^{-1} \tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}\right) \tilde{\Lambda}_{1}^{\prime}$. Let

$$
R=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\tilde{\Lambda}_{1} & -\tilde{\Lambda}_{1} \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon v} \tilde{\Omega}_{v \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1} \\
0 & I_{r_{2}}
\end{array}\right] .
$$

Then $\hat{\Phi}_{p}=R \tilde{\Phi}_{p} R^{-1}$ for $p=1,2, \ldots, K$, and $\hat{\Omega}_{v v}=\tilde{\Omega}_{v v}, \hat{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}=\tilde{\Lambda}_{1} \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v} \tilde{\Lambda}_{1}^{\prime}$.
Remark 3.1 The innovations $\boldsymbol{v}_{t}$ do not involve any identification problem and hence are the same under different identification restrictions, due to the factors $g_{t}$ being observable. As a result, the estimator $\hat{\Omega}_{v v}$ is the same under different identification restrictions. However, for the innovations $\varepsilon_{t}$, its variance matrix is restricted to being an identity matrix under IRa and IRb, so we only need estimate $\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}$ under IRc. The estimator $\hat{\Omega}$ would be useful in the construction of the impulse response function in section 5 .

Remark 3.2 We explain how we recover $f_{t}$ from $f_{t}^{\star}$ (how to obtain $\hat{f}_{t}$ from $\tilde{f}_{t}$ ) using the given formula above. We take IRc as the example to illustrate. By $f_{t}^{\star}=R_{11}\left(f_{t}-\right.$ $\left.\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} g_{t}\right)$, we have $F=\left(F^{\star}+G \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} R_{11}^{\prime}\right) R_{11}^{-1 \prime}$. From the estimation procedure, it is seen that $\tilde{\Lambda}_{1}^{-1}$ corresponds to $R_{11}$. Also notice that

$$
\left[\begin{array}{l}
f_{t} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
R_{11}^{-1} & \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \\
0 & I
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{c}
f_{t}^{\star} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right] \longrightarrow\left[\begin{array}{c}
\varepsilon_{t} \\
\boldsymbol{v}_{t}
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
R_{11}^{-1} & \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \\
0 & I
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{l}
\varepsilon_{t}^{\star} \\
\boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star}
\end{array}\right]
$$

(notice that $\boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star}=\boldsymbol{v}_{t}$ ), which further implies

$$
\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon} & \Omega_{\varepsilon \boldsymbol{v}} \\
\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon} & \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
* & R_{11}^{-1} \Omega_{\varepsilon \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star}+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star} \\
\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}^{\star} R_{11}^{-1 \prime}+\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} &
\end{array}\right] .
$$

By $\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}=0$, we see that $\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}^{\star}=-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} R_{11}^{\prime}$. So the term $-\tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1} \tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}$ is an estimator of $\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} R_{11}^{\prime}$. This justifies the formula $\hat{F}=\left(\tilde{F}-G \tilde{\Omega}_{v \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1} \tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}\right) \tilde{\Lambda}_{1}^{\prime}$ in IRc.

Remark 3.3 The parameters $\Lambda, \Gamma, \Sigma_{e e}, \Phi_{1}, \ldots, \Phi_{k}$ and $\Omega$ can also be estimated by the state space method using the Kalman smoother as in Watson and Engle (1983), Quah and Sargent (1992), and Doz, Giannone, and Reichlin (2012) (though the latter paper considers homoskedastic $e_{i t}$, it can be extended to heteroskedastic errors). But the state space method is computationally more demanding than the two-step method here. That is perhaps the reason that Doz, Giannone, and Reichlin (2011) subsequently also consider a two-step method. Furthermore, it can be shown that, due to the static relationship between $z_{i t}$ and $h_{t}$, there is no asymptotic efficiency gain by using the Kalman smoother. None of these papers study the limiting distributions of the estimators.

Throughout the paper, we use the symbols with a hat to denote the final estimators (for example, $\hat{\lambda}_{i}, \hat{f}_{t}, \hat{\Phi}_{k}$ ) and the symbols with a tilde to denote the intermediate estimators (for example, $\left.\tilde{\lambda}_{i}, \tilde{f}_{t}, \tilde{\Phi}_{k}\right)$. Since $\sigma_{i}^{2}$ does not have the identification problem, the intermediate estimator and the final estimator are the same. For this reason, we use the two symbols interchangeably; that is, $\hat{\sigma}_{i}^{2}=\tilde{\sigma}_{i}^{2}$ and $\hat{\Sigma}_{e e}=\tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}$.

## 4 Asymptotic properties of the estimators

In this section, we deliver the asymptotic results on the two-step estimators. The following proposition states that the two-step estimators are individually consistent.

Proposition 4.1 Under Assumptions $A-D$, when $N, T \rightarrow \infty$, with any one of identification conditions (IRa, IRb or IRc), we have

$$
\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i} \xrightarrow{p} 0 ; \quad \hat{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i} \xrightarrow{p} 0 ; \quad \hat{\sigma}_{i}^{2}-\sigma_{i}^{2} \xrightarrow{p} 0 ; \quad \hat{f}_{t}-f_{t} \xrightarrow{p} 0 ; \quad \hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k} \xrightarrow{p} 0,
$$

for each $i=1,2, \ldots, N ; t=1,2, \ldots, T ; k=1,2, \ldots, K$.
To give the asymptotic representations for the factor loadings, we introduce the following notations. Let $V$ be a $r_{1} \times r_{1}$ matrix, which is defined as follows:
$\operatorname{vec}(V)= \begin{cases}\mathbb{B}_{Q}^{-1} \mathbb{P}_{1} D_{r_{1}}^{+} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left[\varepsilon_{t} \otimes \varepsilon_{t}-\operatorname{vec}\left(I_{r_{1}}\right)\right], & \text { under IRa } \\ \mathbb{D}_{2} \frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left[\varepsilon_{t} \otimes \varepsilon_{t}-\operatorname{vec}\left(I_{r_{1}}\right)\right]+\mathbb{D}_{3}\left(\Lambda_{1} \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}\right)^{-1} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(\xi_{t} \otimes \phi_{t}\right), & \text { under IRb } \\ -\left(I_{r_{1}} \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1}\right) \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \xi_{t} \otimes \phi_{t}, & \text { under IRc }\end{cases}$
where $D_{r}$ is the $r$-dimensional duplication matrix such that $D_{r} \operatorname{vech}(M)=\operatorname{vec}(M)$ for any $r \times r$ symmetric matrix $M$ and $D_{r}^{+}$is its Moore-Penrose inverse; $\mathbb{B}_{Q}=\left[2 D_{r_{1}}^{+\prime},\left(K_{r_{1}}^{\prime}\left(I_{r_{1}} \otimes Q\right)+\right.\right.$ $\left.\left.Q \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right) \mathbb{D}_{1}^{\prime}\right]^{\prime}$ where $K_{r}$ is the $r$-dimensional commutation matrix such that $K_{r} \operatorname{vec}(M)=$ $\operatorname{vec}\left(M^{\prime}\right)$ for any $r \times r$ matrix $M$ and $\mathbb{D}_{1}$ is the matrix such that $\operatorname{veck}(M)=\mathbb{D}_{1} \operatorname{vec}(M)$ for any symmetric matrix, where $\operatorname{veck}(M)$ is the operator that stacks the elements of $M$ below the diagonal into a vector; $\mathbb{P}_{1}=\left[I_{p}, 0_{p \times q}\right]^{\prime}$ with $p=\left(r_{1}+1\right) r_{1} / 2$ and $q=$ $r_{1}\left(r_{1}-1\right) / 2 ; \mathbb{D}_{2}=K_{r_{1}} D_{r_{1}}^{*}\left(D_{r_{1}}^{* /} S_{r_{1}}^{\prime} S_{r_{1}} D_{r_{1}}^{*}\right)^{-1} D_{r_{1}}^{* /} S_{r_{1}}^{\prime} / 2$ where $D^{*}$ is the matrix such that $\operatorname{vec}(M)=D_{r}^{*} \operatorname{vech}(M)$ for any lower triangular $r \times r$ matrix $M$ and $S_{r_{1}}$ is the symmetrizer matrix such that $S_{r}=\left(I_{r^{2}}+K_{r}\right) / 2 ; \mathbb{D}_{3}=2 \mathbb{D}_{2} S_{r_{1}}-I_{r_{1}^{2}} ; \Lambda_{1}$ is the upper $r_{1} \times r_{1}$ submatrix of $\Lambda ; \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}=E\left(\phi_{t} \phi_{t}^{\prime}\right)$ with $\phi_{t}=f_{t}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} g_{t} ; \xi_{t}=\left(e_{1}, e_{2}, \ldots, e_{r_{1} t}\right)^{\prime}$.

Given the consistency, we have the following theorem on the asymptotic representation of the estimator for loadings $\hat{\lambda}_{i}$ :

Theorem 4.1 Under Assumptions $A-D$, when $N, T \rightarrow \infty$ and $\sqrt{T} / N \rightarrow 0$, under IRa, IRb or IRc, we have,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sqrt{T}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}\right)=\sqrt{T} V \lambda_{i}+\Delta_{\phi \phi}^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{T}} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t} e_{i t}\right)+o_{p}(1) \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\phi_{t}=f_{t}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} g_{t}$ and $\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}=E\left(\phi_{t} \phi_{t}^{\prime}\right)$, where $\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g}$ and $\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}$ are defined in (2.4).
Remark 4.1 Consider the limiting distribution under IRa. The restrictions under IRa are similar to those for the principal components estimator. The limiting distribution here is different from that of the usual PC in several ways. First because of the presence of observable $g_{t}$, the "regressors" $f_{t}$ is projected onto $g_{t}$, and the projection error $\phi_{t}$ enters into the distribution. Second, there is an extra term $V$ in the limiting distribution. To better understand this term, consider the situation in which $g_{t}$ is absent, and the dynamics in $h_{t}$ is also absent so that $h_{t}=f_{t}=\varepsilon_{t}$. The restriction $E\left(\varepsilon_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}\right)=I_{r}$ becomes $E\left(f_{t} f_{t}^{\prime}\right)=I_{r}$. The limiting distribution under IRa would be

$$
\sqrt{T}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}\right)=\sqrt{T} V \lambda_{i}+\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t} f_{t}\right)^{-1} \frac{1}{\sqrt{T}} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t} e_{i t}+o_{p}(1)
$$

where $V$ depends on $\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t} f_{t}^{\prime}-I_{r}$. If one imposes the sample version restriction $\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t} f_{t} f_{t}^{\prime}=I_{r}$, then the first term disappears. This result is consistent with that of Bai and Li (2012a), where the sample version restriction is considered. Thus restrictions on sample covariance and restrictions on population covariance lead to different limiting distributions for the estimated factor loadings. The former restrictions imply a larger limiting variance for $\hat{\lambda}_{i}$. Third, because we allow dynamics in $h_{t}$, the first term $V$ involves the innovations of $\varepsilon_{t}$ rather than $f_{t}$.

Under IRb, the population restriction $E\left(\varepsilon_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}\right)=I_{r_{1}}$ continues to affect the limiting distribution. Now $V$ itself is composed of two expressions. The second expression in $V$ is analogous to a term in Bai and Li (2012a) under IC5 .

Under IRc, there are no restrictions on the population variance of $\varepsilon_{t}$, and instead, the restrictions are imposed on the factor loadings. The limiting distribution is analogous to that of Bai and Li (2012a) under IC1.

Remark 4.2 Theorem 4.1 shows that the asymptotic representation for $\hat{\lambda}_{i}$ under different IRs has a similar expression, which justifies our treatment that the asymptotic properties for $\hat{\lambda}_{i}$ under different IRs are studied in a unified framework. The symbol $\phi_{t}$ in the asymptotic representation is the residual of projecting $f_{t}$ on $g_{t}$. Hence it is orthogonal with $g_{t}$. The expression of $V$ is different under different identification restrictions.

To derive the limiting distribution of $\hat{\lambda}_{i}$, we consider the covariance between the first and second term on the right hand side of (4.1). Under IRa, $V$ only involves the VAR innovations $\varepsilon_{t}$, then it is independent with the second term which only involves the idiosyncratic errors $e_{i t}$. Under IRc, we only need to estimate $\lambda_{i}$ with $i>r_{1}$, so the second term only involves $e_{i t}$ where $i>r_{1}$. But $V$ involves $\xi_{t}=\left(e_{1 t}, e_{2 t}, \cdots, e_{r t}\right)$, so it is independent with the second term. Under IRb, for $i>r_{1}$, these two terms are independent for the same reason as under IRc. But for $i \leq r_{1}$, these two terms are correlated. Based on the preceeding analysis and Theorem (4.1), we have the following corollary.

Corollary 4.1 Under the assumptions of Theorem 4.1, with the normality of $u_{t}$, we have
Under IRa:

$$
\sqrt{T}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0,\left(\lambda_{i}^{\prime} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right) 2 \mathbb{B}_{\mathbf{Q}}^{-1} \mathbb{P}_{1}\left(D_{r_{1}}^{\prime} D_{r_{1}}\right)^{-1} \mathbb{P}_{1}^{\prime} \mathbb{B}_{\mathbf{Q}}^{-1 \prime}\left(\lambda_{i} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right)+\sigma_{i}^{2} \Delta_{\phi \phi}^{-1}\right),
$$

Under IRb: for $i>r_{1}$,
$\sqrt{T}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0,\left(\lambda_{i}^{\prime} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right)\left[2 \mathbb{D}_{2} \mathbb{D}_{2}^{\prime}+\mathbb{D}_{3}\left[\left(\Lambda_{1}^{\prime} \Sigma_{\xi \xi}^{-1} \Lambda_{1}\right) \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}\right]^{-1} \mathbb{D}_{3}^{\prime}\right]\left(\lambda_{i} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right)+\sigma_{i}^{2} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1}\right)$,
for $1 \leq i \leq r_{1}$,
$\sqrt{T}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0,\left(\lambda_{i}^{\prime} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right) \mathbb{D}_{2}\left[2 I_{r_{1}^{2}}+4 S_{r_{1}}\left[\left(\Lambda_{1}^{\prime} \Sigma_{\xi \xi}^{-1} \Lambda_{1}\right) \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}\right]^{-1} S_{r_{1}}^{\prime}\right] \mathbb{D}_{2}^{\prime}\left(\lambda_{i} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right)\right)$,
Under IRc: for $i>r_{1}$,

$$
\sqrt{T}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0,\left(\lambda_{i}^{\prime} \Sigma_{\xi \xi} \lambda_{i}+\sigma_{i}^{2}\right) \Delta_{\phi \phi}^{-1}\right),
$$

where $\Sigma_{\xi \xi}=\operatorname{var}\left(\xi_{t}\right)$ with $\xi_{t}=\left(e_{1 t}, e_{2 t}, \ldots, e_{r_{1} t}\right)^{\prime}$. The symbols $\mathbb{B}_{\mathbf{Q}}, \mathbb{P}_{1}, D_{r_{1}}, \mathbb{D}_{2}, \mathbb{D}_{3}, \Lambda_{1}, S_{r_{1}}$ and $\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}$ are defined in the paragraph before Theorem 4.1.

Now we consider the asymptotic results for $\hat{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}$. We have the following theorem.
Theorem 4.2 Under Assumptions $A-D$, when $N, T \rightarrow \infty$ and $\sqrt{T} / N \rightarrow 0$, under IRa, IRb or IRc, we have

$$
\sqrt{T}\left(\hat{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}\right)=\sqrt{T} W \lambda_{i}+\Delta_{\eta \eta}^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{T}} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \eta_{t} e_{i t}\right)+o_{p}(1)
$$

where $\eta_{t}=g_{t}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{-1} f_{t}$ and $\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}=E\left(\eta_{t} \eta_{t}^{\prime}\right)$ where $\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f}$ and $\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}$ are defined (2.4). In addition,

$$
W=\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \boldsymbol{v}_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}
$$

Similar to Theorem (4.1), the asymptotic representation of $\hat{\gamma}_{i}$ under different IRs also has a unified expression. Symmetric to the symbol $\phi_{t}$ in Theorem 4.1, the symbol $\eta_{t}$ here is the residual of projecting $g_{t}$ on $f_{t}$. The matrix $W$ has a unified expression under different IRs. If the population restriction $E\left(\boldsymbol{v}_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}\right)=0$ is replaced by the sample version $\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \boldsymbol{v}_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}=0$, then the first term $W$ disappears.

Notice that the two terms in the asymptotic representation of $\hat{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}$ are independent, since the first term only involves $u_{t}$ but the second term only involves $e_{i t}$. Then we have the following corollary.

Corollary 4.2 Under the assumptions of Theorem 4.2, we have

$$
\sqrt{T}\left(\hat{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0,\left(\lambda_{i}^{\prime} \Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon} \lambda_{i}\right) \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1}+\sigma_{i}^{2} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1}\right)
$$

where $\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}$ and $\Omega_{v v}$ are defined in (2.4).

After deriving the asymptotic result of loadings, we consider the estimation of the unobservable factors $\hat{f_{t}}$. The asymptotic result of $\hat{f}_{t}-f_{t}$ involves both $V$ and $W$ matrices, which is stated in the following theorem.

Theorem 4.3 Let $\kappa=N / T$. Under Assumptions $A-D$, when $N, T \rightarrow \infty$, we have

$$
\sqrt{N}\left(\hat{f}_{t}-f_{t}\right)=\left(\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i} \lambda_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{N}} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i} e_{i t}\right)-\sqrt{\kappa}\left(\sqrt{T} V^{\prime} f_{t}+\sqrt{T} W^{\prime} g_{t}\right)+o_{p}(1)
$$

Notice in the asymptotic representation of $\hat{f}_{t}-f_{t}$, the first term and $V$ and $W$ are asymptotically uncorrelated with each other. To prove this, first consider $V$ and $W$. Under IRa, notice $E\left[\operatorname{vec}(V) \operatorname{vec}(W)^{\prime} \mid \varepsilon\right]=0$ where $\varepsilon=\left(\varepsilon_{1}, \ldots, \varepsilon_{T}\right)^{\prime}$. Thus $E\left[\operatorname{vec}(V) \operatorname{vec}(W)^{\prime}\right]=$ $E\left[E\left(\operatorname{vec}(V) \operatorname{vec}(W)^{\prime} \mid \varepsilon\right)\right]=0$. Under IRc, we also have the same result since $E\left[\operatorname{vec}(V) \operatorname{vec}(W)^{\prime} \mid u\right]=$ 0 where $u=\left(u_{1}, \ldots, u_{T}\right)^{\prime}$. Combining the above two results under IRa and IRb, we have $E\left(\operatorname{vec}(V) \operatorname{vec}(W)^{\prime}\right]=0$ under $\operatorname{IRb}$. Then we show the first term is asymptotically uncorrelated with both $V$ and $W$. Since $W$ only involves $u$ while the first term only involves $e$, they are independent under all IRs. Under IRa, $V$ is independent with the first term for the same reason. Under IRc, $V$ involves $u_{i t}$ over $t$ while the first term involves $e_{i t}$ over $i$, so the covariance between them is asymptotically zero. The previous two cases imply that under IRb, $V$ is also asymptotically uncorrelated with the first term. Given the above analysis, we derive the limiting distribution in the following corollary.

Corollary 4.3 Under the assumptions of Theorem 4.3, with normality of $u_{t}$, we have Under IRa:

$$
\sqrt{N}\left(\hat{f}_{t}-f_{t}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0, \mathbf{Q}^{-1}+\kappa\left[2 \mathcal{F}_{t}^{\prime} \mathbb{B}_{\mathbf{Q}}^{-1} \mathbb{P}_{1}\left(D_{r_{1}}^{\prime} D_{r_{1}}\right)^{-1} \mathbb{P}_{1}^{\prime} \mathbb{B}_{\mathbf{Q}}^{-1 \prime} \mathcal{F}_{t}+g_{t}^{\prime} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1} g_{t} \Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}\right]\right)
$$

under IRb:
$\sqrt{N}\left(\hat{f}_{t}-f_{t}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0, \mathbf{Q}^{-1}+\kappa\left[\mathcal{F}_{t}^{\prime}\left(2 \mathbb{D}_{2} \mathbb{D}_{2}^{\prime}+\mathbb{D}_{3}\left[\left(\Lambda_{1}^{\prime} \Sigma_{\xi \xi}^{-1} \Lambda_{1}\right) \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}\right]^{-1} \mathbb{D}_{3}^{\prime}\right) \mathcal{F}_{t}+g_{t}^{\prime} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1} g_{t} \Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}\right]\right)$, under IRc:

$$
\sqrt{N}\left(\hat{f}_{t}-f_{t}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0, \mathbf{Q}^{-1}+\kappa\left[f_{t}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1} f_{t} \Sigma_{\xi \xi}+g_{t}^{\prime} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1} g_{t} \Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}\right]\right)
$$

where $\mathcal{F}_{t}=I_{r_{1}} \otimes f_{t}$ and $\mathbf{Q}=\lim _{N \rightarrow \infty} Q$.
For estimator $\hat{\sigma}_{i}^{2}$, we have the following theorem and corollary.

Theorem 4.4 Under Assumptions $A-D$, when $N, T \rightarrow 0$,

$$
\sqrt{T}\left(\hat{\sigma}_{i}^{2}-\sigma_{i}^{2}\right)=\frac{1}{\sqrt{T}} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(e_{i t}^{2}-\sigma_{i}^{2}\right)+o_{p}(1)
$$

In addition, we have

$$
\sqrt{T}\left(\hat{\sigma}_{i}^{2}-\sigma_{i}^{2}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0, \sigma_{i}^{4}\left(2+\kappa_{i}\right)\right)
$$

where $\kappa_{i}$ is the excess kurtosis of $e_{i t}$. With the normality of $e_{i t}$, the limiting distribution reduces to $\mathcal{N}\left(0,2 \sigma_{i}^{4}\right)$.

Notice $e_{i t}$ does not have the identification problem. Consequently its asymptotic representation does not depend on the identification restrictions. We then consider the asymptotic representation of $\hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}$, which is stated in the following theorem.

Theorem 4.5 Under Assumptions $A-D$, when $N, T \rightarrow 0$ and $\sqrt{T} / N \rightarrow 0$, we have

$$
\sqrt{T}\left(\hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}\right)=\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t} \psi_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t} \psi_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(i_{k} \otimes I_{r}\right)-\sqrt{T} B^{\prime} \Phi_{k}+\sqrt{T} \Phi_{k} B^{\prime}+o_{p}(1)
$$

where $\psi_{t}=\left(h_{t-1}^{\prime}, h_{t-2}^{\prime}, \ldots, h_{t-K}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}$ and $B$ is defined as $B=[V, 0 ; W, 0]$.

If the factors $f_{t}$ were observed, the asymptotic representation of $\sqrt{T}\left(\hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}\right)$ would be

$$
\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t} \psi_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t} \psi_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(i_{k} \otimes I_{r}\right)+o_{p}(1)
$$

However, $f_{t}$ is unobservable, the asymptotic representation of $\sqrt{T}\left(\hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}\right)$ then has two extra terms, $-\sqrt{T} B^{\prime} \Phi_{k}+\sqrt{T} \Phi_{k} B^{\prime}$. Theorem 4.5 shows that the inferential theory of the standard VAR models cannot be applied to the FAVAR model.

Given Theorem 4.5, we have the following corollary.

Corollary 4.4 Under the assumptions of Theorem 4.5, with normality of $u_{t}$, we have

$$
\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0, \mathscr{V}_{k} \otimes \Omega+\mathbb{D}_{6} J \mathbb{D}_{6}^{\prime}\right),
$$

where $\mathscr{V}_{k}$ denotes the $(k, k)$ th $r \times r$ submatrix of $\left[E\left(\psi_{t} \psi_{t}^{\prime}\right)\right]^{-1}$ and $J$ is the limiting variance of $\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}(B)$ and defined as

Under IRa:

$$
J=2 \mathbb{D}_{4} \mathbb{B}_{\mathbf{Q}}^{-1} \mathbb{P}_{1}\left(D_{r_{1}}^{\prime} D_{r_{1}}\right)^{-1} \mathbb{P}_{1}^{\prime} \mathbb{B}_{\mathbf{Q}}^{-1 /} \mathbb{D}_{4}^{\prime}+\mathbb{D}_{5}\left(\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon} \otimes \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v v}}^{-1}\right) \mathbb{D}_{5}
$$

Under IRb:

$$
J=\mathbb{D}_{4}\left(2 \mathbb{D}_{2} \mathbb{D}_{2}^{\prime}+\mathbb{D}_{3}\left[\left(\Lambda_{1}^{\prime} \Sigma_{\xi \xi}^{-1} \Lambda_{1}\right) \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}\right]^{-1} \mathbb{D}_{3}^{\prime}\right) \mathbb{D}_{4}^{\prime}+\mathbb{D}_{5}\left(\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon} \otimes \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v v}}^{-1}\right) \mathbb{D}_{5}
$$

Under IRc:

$$
J=\mathbb{D}_{4}\left(\Sigma_{\xi \xi} \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1}\right) \mathbb{D}_{4}^{\prime}+\mathbb{D}_{5}\left(\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon} \otimes \Omega_{v v}^{-1}\right) \mathbb{D}_{5}
$$

where $\mathbb{D}_{4}$ and $\mathbb{D}_{5}$ are respective $r^{2} \times r_{1}^{2}$ and $r^{2} \times r_{1} r_{2}$ matrices such that $\operatorname{vec}(B)=\mathbb{D}_{4} \operatorname{vec}(V)+$ $\mathbb{D}_{5} \operatorname{vec}(W) ; \mathbb{D}_{6}=\left(I_{r} \otimes \Phi_{k}-\Phi_{k}^{\prime} \otimes I_{r}\right) K_{r}$ with $K_{r}$ the $r$-dimensional commutation matrix.

## 5 Impulse response function

Impulse response function plays an important role in the VAR analysis. In this section, we construct the confidence intervals for impulse response function of model (2.1). Let $\Phi=\left(\Phi_{1}, \Phi_{2}, \ldots, \Phi_{K}\right)$. Theorem 4.5 gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\Phi}^{\prime}-\Phi^{\prime}\right)= & {\left[I_{r} \otimes\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \psi_{t} \psi_{t}^{\prime}\right)\right]^{-1}\left[\frac{1}{\sqrt{T}} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(u_{t} \otimes \psi_{t}\right)\right] } \\
& -\sqrt{T}\left(I_{r} \otimes \Phi^{\prime}\right) \operatorname{vec}(B)+\sqrt{T}\left(\Phi \otimes I_{K r}\right) \operatorname{vec}\left(I_{K} \otimes B\right)+o_{p}(1) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $\mathbb{D}_{9}$ be a $K^{2} r^{2} \times r^{2}$ matrix satisfying that $\operatorname{vec}\left(I_{K} \otimes B\right)=\mathbb{D}_{9} \operatorname{vec}(B)$. Given this result, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\Phi}^{\prime}-\Phi^{\prime}\right)= & {\left[I_{r} \otimes\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \psi_{t} \psi_{t}^{\prime}\right)\right]^{-1}\left[\frac{1}{\sqrt{T}} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(u_{t} \otimes \psi_{t}\right)\right] } \\
& +\left[\left(\Phi \otimes I_{K r}\right) \mathbb{D}_{9}-\left(I_{r} \otimes \Phi^{\prime}\right)\right] \sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}(B)+o_{p}(1)
\end{aligned}
$$

By definition, it is seen that $\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}(B)$ is asymptotically independent with $\frac{1}{\sqrt{T}} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(u_{t} \otimes\right.$ $\left.\psi_{t}\right)$. Let $\mathbb{D}_{10}=\left(\Phi \otimes I_{K r}\right) \mathbb{D}_{9}-\left(I_{r} \otimes \Phi^{\prime}\right)$. Under the normality of $u_{t}$, we have

$$
\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\Phi}^{\prime}-\Phi^{\prime}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0, \Omega \otimes\left[E\left(\psi_{t} \psi_{t}^{\prime}\right)\right]^{-1}+\mathbb{D}_{10} J \mathbb{D}_{10}^{\prime}\right)
$$

where $J$ is the limiting variance of $\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}(B)$ and $\Omega=E\left(u_{t} u_{t}^{\prime}\right)$.
Under the assumption of stationarity of the process $h_{t}$, model (2.1) has a vector MA $(\infty)$ expression

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{t}=u_{t}+\Psi_{1} u_{t-1}+\Psi_{2} u_{t-2}+\ldots . \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Given the asymptotic results of $\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\Phi}^{\prime}-\Phi^{\prime}\right)$, the limiting distribution of $\hat{\Psi}_{s}-\Psi_{s}$ for all $s$ can be derived in the standard way (see Hamilton (1994) p.336). The limiting result is stated in the following theorem.

Theorem 5.1 Under Assumptions $A-D$, when $N, T \rightarrow \infty$ and $\sqrt{T} / N \rightarrow 0$,

$$
\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\Psi}_{s}^{\prime}-\Psi_{s}^{\prime}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0, \Upsilon_{s}\left[\Omega \otimes\left[E\left(\psi_{t} \psi_{t}^{\prime}\right)\right]^{-1}+\mathbb{D}_{10} J \mathbb{D}_{10}^{\prime}\right] \Upsilon_{s}^{\prime}\right)
$$

where $\Upsilon_{s}$ is defined recursively by

$$
\Upsilon_{s}=\sum_{i=1}^{s} \Psi_{i-1} \otimes\left[\begin{array}{llll}
\Psi_{s-i}^{\prime} & \Psi_{s-i-1}^{\prime} & \ldots & \Psi_{s-i-K+1}^{\prime}
\end{array}\right]
$$

with $\Psi_{0}=I_{r}$ and $\Psi_{s}=0$ for $s<0$.
We notice that the above impulse response functions are derived from the non-orthogonal shocks. In the analysis of some structural models, the impulse response functions for orthogonal shocks are required. For this, we consider decomposing $\Omega=\operatorname{var}\left(u_{t}\right)$. Let $\mathcal{P}$ be the lower triangular matrix, which is obtained by the Cholesky decomposition of $\Omega$. And let $\omega_{t}$ be the corresponding structural shocks with the relation that $u_{t}=\mathcal{P} \omega_{t}$. Then the moving average expression (5.1) can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{t}=\mathcal{P} \omega_{t}+\Psi_{1} \mathcal{P} \omega_{t-1}+\Psi_{2} \mathcal{P} \omega_{t-2}+\cdots=\mathbb{C}_{0} \omega_{t}+\mathbb{C}_{1} \omega_{t-1}+\mathbb{C}_{2} \omega_{t-2}+\cdots \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\mathbb{C}_{s}=\Psi_{s} \mathcal{P}$ being the impulse response function corresponding to the structural shocks $\omega_{t}$.

Remark 5.1 There are some cases in which no Cholesky decomposition is needed. For instance, in the application of Bernanke, Boivin and Eliasz (2005), $g_{t}$ is a scalar that is the federal fund rate. Then $\Omega_{v v}$ is a scalar and hence a diagonal matrix. So under IRa and IRb, $\hat{\Omega}$ is diagonal implying that the innovations $u_{t}$ are mutually orthogonal and hence can be interpreted as structural shocks. But under IRc, $\hat{\Omega}$ is not diagonal due to the non-diagonal matrix $\hat{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}$.

Next we aim to derive the limiting distribution of $\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}\left(\widehat{\mathbb{C}}_{s}-\mathbb{C}_{s}\right)$, on which basis the confidence intervals of the impulse response function can be constructed.

By definition, $\mathbb{C}_{s}$ is related to both $\Psi_{s}$ and $\mathcal{P}$. The limiting distribution of $\hat{\Psi}_{s}-\Psi_{s}$ is given in Theorem 5.1. The limiting distribution of $\hat{\mathcal{P}}-\mathcal{P}$ can be derived based on the following theorem, since by definition, $\mathcal{P}$ is related to $\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}$ and $\Omega_{v v}$.

Theorem 5.2 Under Assumption A-D, when $N, T \rightarrow \infty$, the estimator $\tilde{\Omega}_{v v}$ is consistent for $\Omega_{v v}$. With normality of $u_{t}$ and $\sqrt{T} / N \rightarrow 0$, under IRa, IRb or IRc, we have

$$
\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vech}\left(\tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}-\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0,2 D_{r_{2}}^{+}\left(\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}} \otimes \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}\right) D_{r_{2}}^{+\prime}\right) .
$$

where $D_{r_{2}}^{+}$is the Moore-Penrose inverse of an $r_{2}$-dimensional duplication matrix. In addition, under IRc, we also have

$$
\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vech}\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0, D_{r_{1}}^{+}\left(2 \Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon} \otimes \Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}+4 S_{r_{1}}\left(\Sigma_{\xi \xi} \otimes \Delta_{\phi \phi}^{-1}\right) S_{r_{1}}^{\prime}\right) D_{r_{1}}^{+\prime}\right)
$$

Further, based on Theorem 5.1 and Theorem 5.2, we can derive the limiting distribution of $\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}\left(\widehat{\mathbb{C}}_{s}-\mathbb{C}_{s}\right)$ as in the following theorem.

Theorem 5.3 Under Assumptions $A-D$ together with normality of $u_{t}$, when $N, T \rightarrow \infty$ and $\sqrt{T} / N \rightarrow 0$, we have

## Under IRa and IRb,

$$
\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{s}-\mathbb{C}_{s}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0,\left(\mathcal{P}^{\prime} \otimes I_{r}\right) K_{r} \Upsilon_{s} \mathbb{J}_{1} \Upsilon_{s}^{\prime} K_{r}^{\prime}\left(\mathcal{P} \otimes I_{r}\right)+\left(I_{r} \otimes \Psi_{s}\right) \mathbb{D}_{7} \mathbb{J}_{2} \mathbb{D}_{7}^{\prime}\left(I_{r} \otimes \Psi_{s}^{\prime}\right)\right)
$$

Under IRc,

$$
\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{s}-\mathbb{C}_{s}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0,\left(\mathcal{P}^{\prime} \otimes I_{r}\right) K_{r} \Upsilon_{s} \mathbb{J}_{1} \Upsilon_{s}^{\prime} K_{r}^{\prime}\left(\mathcal{P} \otimes I_{r}\right)+\left(I_{r} \otimes \Psi_{s}\right) \mathbb{J}_{3}\left(I_{r} \otimes \Psi_{s}^{\prime}\right)\right)
$$

with $\mathbb{J}_{1}=\Omega \otimes\left[E\left(\psi_{t} \psi_{t}^{\prime}\right)\right]^{-1}+\mathbb{D}_{10} J \mathbb{D}_{10}^{\prime}, \mathbb{J}_{2}=2 \mathbb{W}_{2}\left(\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}} \otimes \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}\right) \mathbb{W}_{2}^{\prime}$ and $\mathbb{J}_{3}=\mathbb{D}_{8} \mathbb{W}_{1}\left[2\left(\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon} \otimes\right.\right.$ $\left.\left.\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}\right)+4 S_{r_{1}}\left(\Sigma_{\xi \xi} \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1}\right) S_{r_{1}}^{\prime}\right] \mathbb{W}_{1}^{\prime} \mathbb{D}_{8}^{\prime}+2 \mathbb{D}_{7} \mathbb{W}_{2}\left(\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}} \otimes \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}\right) \mathbb{W}_{2}^{\prime} \mathbb{D}_{7}^{\prime} . \mathbb{D}_{7}$ and $\mathbb{D}_{8}$ are transformation matrices such that for any $M_{r \times r}=\left[M_{1}, 0 ; 0, M_{2}\right]$ where $M_{1}$ is $r_{1} \times r_{1}$ and $M_{2}$ is $r_{2} \times r_{2}$ and both are lower-triangular matrices, $\operatorname{vec}(M)=\mathbb{D}_{8} \operatorname{vech}\left(M_{1}\right)+\mathbb{D}_{7} \operatorname{vech}\left(M_{2}\right) ; \mathbb{W}_{1}$ and $\mathbb{W}_{2}$ are defined in Appendix E.

Then based on (2.2) and (5.2), the impulse response function of the observable variables $z_{t}$ with respect to the structural shocks $\omega_{t}$ is

$$
\frac{\partial z_{i, t+k}}{\partial \omega_{t}}=\mathbb{C}_{k}^{\prime}\left[\begin{array}{l}
\lambda_{i} \\
\gamma_{i}
\end{array}\right]
$$

for each $i$ and for all $k \geq 0$. Then note that

$$
\frac{\widehat{\partial z_{i, t+k}}}{\partial \omega_{t}}-\frac{\partial z_{i, t+k}}{\partial \omega_{t}}=\left(\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{k}-\mathbb{C}_{k}\right)^{\prime}\left[\begin{array}{l}
\lambda_{i} \\
\gamma_{i}
\end{array}\right]+\mathbb{C}_{k}^{\prime}\left[\begin{array}{l}
\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i} \\
\hat{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}
\end{array}\right]
$$

has two components, which arise from estimating the loadings $\left(\lambda_{i}, \gamma_{i}\right)$ and the MA $(\infty)$ coefficients $\mathbb{C}_{k}$. From the asymptotic representations of $\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}\right),\left(\hat{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}\right)$ and $\left(\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{k}-\mathbb{C}_{k}\right)$, taking into account their covariances, we obtain the following theorem on the impulse response function.

Theorem 5.4 (Impulse Response Function) Under Assumptions A-D together with normality of $u_{t}$, when $N, T \rightarrow \infty$ and $\sqrt{T} / N \rightarrow 0$, under IRa, IRb or IRc, we have

$$
\sqrt{T}\left(\frac{\widehat{\partial z_{i, t+k}}}{\partial \omega_{t}}-\frac{\partial z_{i, t+k}}{\partial \omega_{t}}\right) \stackrel{d}{\rightarrow} \mathcal{N}\left(0, \operatorname{Avar}\left(\frac{\widehat{\partial z_{i, t+k}}}{\partial \omega_{t}}\right)\right)
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{Avar}\left(\frac{\left.\frac{\partial z_{i, t+k}}{\partial \omega_{t}}\right)=}{}\left(\lambda_{i}^{\prime}, \gamma_{i}^{\prime}\right) \otimes I_{r} \cdot K_{r} \cdot \operatorname{Avar}\left(\operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{k}\right)\right) \cdot K_{r}^{\prime} \cdot\left(\lambda_{i}^{\prime}, \gamma_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime} \otimes I_{r}+\mathbb{C}_{k}^{\prime} \cdot \operatorname{Avar}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\prime}, \hat{\gamma}_{i}^{\prime}\right) \cdot \mathbb{C}_{k}\right. \\
&+\left(\mathcal{P}^{\prime} \otimes I_{r}\right) K_{r} \Upsilon_{k} \mathbb{D}_{10} J\left[\left(\lambda_{i}^{\prime}, \gamma_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime} \otimes \mathbb{C}_{k}\right]+\left[\left(\lambda_{i}^{\prime}, \gamma_{i}^{\prime}\right) \otimes \mathbb{C}_{k}^{\prime}\right] J \mathbb{D}_{10}^{\prime} \Upsilon_{k}^{\prime} K_{r}^{\prime}\left(\mathcal{P} \otimes I_{r}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

with $\operatorname{Avar}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\prime}, \hat{\gamma}_{i}^{\prime}\right)=\operatorname{diag}\left(\operatorname{Avar}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}\right), \operatorname{Avar}\left(\hat{\gamma}_{i}\right)\right) ; \operatorname{Avar}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}\right), \operatorname{Avar}\left(\hat{\gamma}_{i}\right)$ and $\operatorname{Avar}\left(\operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{k}\right)\right)$ are given in Corollary (4.1), Corollary (4.2) and Theorem (5.3) respectively; $K_{r}$ is the commutation matrix defined as in Section $4 ; J$ is the limiting variance of $\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}(B)$ defined as in Corollary (4.4) and $\Upsilon_{k}$ is defined in Theorem (5.1).

Once estimators for $\operatorname{Avar}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}\right), \operatorname{Avar}\left(\hat{\gamma}_{i}\right)$ and $\operatorname{Avar}\left(\operatorname{vec}\left(\widehat{\mathbb{C}}_{k}\right)\right)$ are obtained, the confidence intervals for the impulse response function can be easily constructed. For example, the $95 \%$ confidence interval for the impulse response function $\frac{\partial z_{i, t+k}}{\partial \omega_{t}}$ is

$$
\left(\left(\frac{\partial z_{i, t+k}}{\partial \omega_{t}}\right)-\frac{1.96}{\sqrt{T}}\left[\operatorname{diag}\left\{\widehat{\operatorname{Avar}}\left(\frac{\partial z_{i, t+k}}{\partial \omega_{t}}\right)\right\}\right]^{1 / 2},\left(\widehat{\left.\frac{\partial z_{i, t+k}}{\partial \omega_{t}}\right)}+\frac{1.96}{\sqrt{T}}\left[\operatorname{diag}\left\{\widehat{\operatorname{Avar}}\left(\frac{\partial z_{i, t+k}}{\partial \omega_{t}}\right)\right\}\right]^{1 / 2}\right)\right.
$$

where $\left(\frac{\partial z_{i, t+k}}{\partial \omega_{t}}\right)=\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{k}^{\prime}\left[\begin{array}{l}\hat{\lambda}_{i} \\ \hat{\gamma}_{i}\end{array}\right]$, and $\operatorname{diag}\{\cdot\}$ stacks the diagonal elements of the argument into a column vector, and

$$
\begin{aligned}
\widehat{\operatorname{Avar}}\left(\frac{\partial z_{i, t+k}}{\partial \omega_{t}}\right)= & \left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\prime}, \hat{\gamma}_{i}^{\prime}\right) \otimes I_{r} \cdot K_{r} \cdot \widehat{\operatorname{Avar}}\left(\operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{k}\right)\right) \cdot K_{r}^{\prime} \cdot\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\prime}, \hat{\gamma}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime} \otimes I_{r}+\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{k}^{\prime} \cdot \widehat{\operatorname{Avar}}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\prime}, \hat{\gamma}_{i}^{\prime}\right) \cdot \hat{\mathbb{C}}_{k} \\
& +\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}^{\prime} \otimes I_{r}\right) K_{r} \hat{\Upsilon}_{k} \hat{\mathbb{D}}_{10} \hat{J}\left[\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\prime}, \hat{\gamma}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime} \otimes \hat{\mathbb{C}}_{k}\right]+\left[\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\prime}, \hat{\gamma}_{i}^{\prime}\right) \otimes \hat{\mathbb{C}}_{k}^{\prime}\right] \hat{J} \hat{\mathbb{D}}_{10}^{\prime} \hat{\Upsilon}_{k}^{\prime} K_{r}^{\prime}\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}} \otimes I_{r}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

with $\widehat{\operatorname{Avar}}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\prime}, \hat{\gamma}_{i}^{\prime}\right)$ being the estimate of $\operatorname{Avar}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\prime}, \hat{\gamma}_{i}^{\prime}\right)$ and $\widehat{\operatorname{Avar}}\left(\operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{k}\right)\right)$ being the estimate of $\operatorname{Avar}\left(\operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{k}\right)\right) ; \hat{\mathcal{P}}, \hat{\Upsilon}_{k}, \hat{\mathbb{D}}_{10}$ and $\hat{J}$ are the estimates of $\mathcal{P}, \Upsilon_{k}, \mathbb{D}_{10}$ and $J$ respectively.

## 6 Finite sample properties

In this section, we run Monte Carlo simulations to investigate the finite sample properties of the two-step estimators. For the sake of space, we only consider IRb and IRc, which are of more practical relevance. In factor analysis literature, many studies, such as Bai and Li (2012a,b), Doz, Giannone, and Reichlin (2012), investigate the finite sample properties of the QMLE; that is, $\tilde{\Lambda}, \tilde{F}, \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}$. Consequently in this paper we instead focus on the performance of the estimator $\hat{\Phi}$. Notice that $\hat{\Phi}$ has a close relation with the impulse response function, which in many occasions is the primary tool of the economic analysis. Hence the finite sample properties of $\hat{\Phi}$ deserves our special attention.

The factors are assumed to follow $\operatorname{VAR}(1)$ and are generated according to

$$
h_{t}=\Phi h_{t-1}+u_{t}
$$

where $h_{t}=\left(f_{t}^{\prime}, g_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}$ and $u_{t}$ is an i.i.d. $\mathcal{N}(0, \Omega)$ process. Matrix $\Omega$ is restricted by the identification IRb and IRc and exhibits the form, respectively,

$$
\text { (IRb) }\left[\begin{array}{cc}
I_{r_{1}} & 0 \\
0 & \Omega_{22}
\end{array}\right], \quad \text { (IRc) }\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\Omega_{11} & 0 \\
0 & \Omega_{22}
\end{array}\right]
$$

where $\Omega_{11}$ and $\Omega_{22}$ are both symmetric positive definite matrices. The symmetric positive matrix is generated according to $\Omega=\mathbb{M} D \mathbb{M}^{\prime}$, where $\mathbb{M}=M\left(M^{\prime} M\right)^{-1 / 2}$ with $M$ being any $r \times r$ standard normal random matrix and $D$ is a diagonal matrix with all its diagonal elements drawn from $(1+\mathcal{U}[0,1])^{2}$. Throughout the simulation, the number of unknown factors and known factors, $r_{1}$ and $r_{2}$, are set to 2 and 1 (so $r=r_{1}+r_{2}=3$ ). In addition, the parameter $\Phi$ is fixed to $0.7 I_{r}$.

All the factor loadings are generated independently from $\mathcal{N}(0,1)$ (where $\Lambda$ is $N \times 2$ and $\Gamma$ is $N \times 1$ ). To make the underlying factor loadings satisfy the identification restrictions, we set the ( 1,2 )th element of $\Lambda$ to be 0 under IRb and the upper $2 \times 2$ matrix of $\Lambda$ to be the identity matrix under IRc. After the factor loadings are obtained, the data are generated by

$$
z_{t}=\Lambda f_{t}+\Gamma g_{t}+e_{t}
$$

where $e_{t}=\left(e_{1 t}, e_{2 t}, \ldots, e_{N t}\right)^{\prime}$ with $e_{i t} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(0, \sigma_{i}^{2}\right)$, where $\sigma_{i}^{2} \sim 1+\mathcal{U}[0,1]$.
After the data $(Z, G)$ are constructed, we need to determine the number of unknown factors $r_{1}$ before estimation. There are two approaches to determine $r_{1}$. One approach is to first estimate the total number of factors based on $Z$ (denoted as $\hat{r}$ ) by the information criterion proposed in Bai and $\operatorname{Ng}(2002)$, and then get $\hat{r}_{1}=\hat{r}-r_{2}$ where $r_{2}$ is the number of known factors. A better approach is to directly estimate the number of unknown factors $\hat{r}_{1}$ through the transformed data $Z \mathbb{M}_{G}$. The second approach is adopted in simulations. Once $r_{1}$ is determined, we use the method described in the previous section to estimate the parameters.

The identification conditions IRb have so-called sign problem. ${ }^{4}$ To eliminate this problem, after the estimated factors $\hat{F}$ are obtained, we calculate the correlation coefficients between each column of $\hat{F}$ and the corresponding column of $F$. If the coefficient is negative, then multiply -1 to that column of $\hat{F}$ and the corresponding column of $\hat{\Lambda}$. In practice, this treatment is not feasible. However, sign problem can be fixed by other means, see Stock and Watson (2005). We consider a combination of $N=50,100,200$ and $T=50,100,200,500$. All the results are obtained in 1000 repetitions.

Table 1 reports the root of mean square error (RMSE) of all elements of $\Phi$. The last element of each row is the average of the left nine elements under IRb. On the whole, we can see that the RMSE decreases as the sample size becomes larger. More concretely, Table 1 shows that the RMSE is closely linked with the time length $T$ and little related to

[^3]the cross-sectional size $N$. Take $\Phi_{11}$ as an example. When $T=200$ and $N=50,100,200$, the corresponding three RMSEs are $0.0611,0.0572$, and 0.0557 , which are roughly equal. However, when $T$ increases to 500 , the corresponding three RMSEs are $0.0373,0.0343$, and 0.0335 , which are still roughly equal but dramatically lower in comparison with those of $T=200$. This result is consistent with results in Theorem 4.5.

Aside from the consistency, we are also concerned about the limiting distribution of $\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\Phi}^{\prime}-\Phi^{\prime}\right)$, which, as seen in the last section, has a direct effect on the confidential interval of the impulse response function. To this end, we calculate the size of $t$-test for every $\Phi_{i j}$ in each simulation and count the number of times that the absolute value of $t$-statistics is greater than the critical value of the $5 \%$ significance level for the standard normal distribution (i.e., 1.96) in 1000 repetitions. Table 2 reports the actual significance level that corresponds to $5 \%$ nominal size for every $\Phi_{i j}$. As in Table 1, we average the result of the nine elements of $\Phi$ and report the result in the last column. From Table 2, we find that, unlike in table 1, the actual significance level is related to both $N$ and $T$. When the sample size is small, say $N=50, T=50$, the size distortion is a little larger, for $\Phi_{22}$, the actual significance level is 0.086 . However, when the sample becomes larger, the distortion gradually decreases (see the last column). When $N=200, T=500$, we can see that all the elements of $\Phi$ have a satisfactory size.

The results under IRc are similar to those under IRb and are reported in Tables 3 and 4. We do not repeat the detailed analysis.

## 7 Concluding remarks

This paper considers the identification, estimation, and inferential theory of the FAVAR model. Three sets of identification restrictions are considered. We propose a likelihoodbased two-step method to estimate the parameters. Consistency, convergence rates, asymptotic representations, and the limiting distributions have been established. The impulse response function and its confidence intervals are also provided. An important result from our theory is that if the identification conditions are imposed on the population variance rather than on the sample variance of the factor process, an additional term, which arises from the distance between the sample variance and the population variance, would enter the final asymptotic representations. Consequently the limiting variances of the estimators are larger. We studied the ways in which this distance affects the limiting distributions. The finite sample Monte Carlo simulation confirms our theoretical results.

The analysis of this paper assumes constant parameters. In empirical applications with a long time span, it is likely that a structural change occurs, either in the dynamics of $h_{t}$, or in the factor loadings $(\Lambda, \Gamma)$. It is of interest to develop inference procedures allowing for this possibility, as in Chen, Dolado and Gonzalo (2011), Cheng, Liao and Schorfheide (2013) and Han and Inoue (2011).

Table 1. The RMSEs of all the elements of $\hat{\Phi}$ under IRb

| $N$ | $T$ | $\Phi_{11}$ | $\Phi_{12}$ | $\Phi_{13}$ | $\Phi_{21}$ | $\Phi_{22}$ | $\Phi_{23}$ | $\Phi_{31}$ | $\Phi_{32}$ | $\Phi_{33}$ | Ave |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 50 | 50 | 0.1360 | 0.1261 | 0.0902 | 0.1318 | 0.1474 | 0.0925 | 0.1804 | 0.1748 | 0.1170 | 0.1329 |
| 100 | 50 | 0.1307 | 0.1177 | 0.0919 | 0.1252 | 0.1351 | 0.0939 | 0.1799 | 0.1722 | 0.1209 | 0.1297 |
| 200 | 50 | 0.1335 | 0.1208 | 0.0894 | 0.1230 | 0.1320 | 0.0885 | 0.1736 | 0.1625 | 0.1218 | 0.1272 |
| 50 | 100 | 0.0933 | 0.0803 | 0.0569 | 0.0846 | 0.0891 | 0.0591 | 0.1179 | 0.1185 | 0.0810 | 0.0867 |
| 100 | 100 | 0.0841 | 0.0788 | 0.0563 | 0.0783 | 0.0848 | 0.0563 | 0.1113 | 0.1133 | 0.0811 | 0.0827 |
| 200 | 100 | 0.0844 | 0.0794 | 0.0554 | 0.0798 | 0.0879 | 0.0538 | 0.1106 | 0.1147 | 0.0816 | 0.0831 |
| 50 | 200 | 0.0611 | 0.0534 | 0.0380 | 0.0560 | 0.0614 | 0.0369 | 0.0787 | 0.0833 | 0.0529 | 0.0580 |
| 100 | 200 | 0.0572 | 0.0563 | 0.0379 | 0.0532 | 0.0600 | 0.0396 | 0.0795 | 0.0799 | 0.0559 | 0.0577 |
| 200 | 200 | 0.0557 | 0.0519 | 0.0370 | 0.0528 | 0.0547 | 0.0369 | 0.0836 | 0.0797 | 0.0551 | 0.0564 |
| 50 | 500 | 0.0373 | 0.0326 | 0.0236 | 0.0328 | 0.0380 | 0.0235 | 0.0495 | 0.0514 | 0.0336 | 0.0358 |
| 100 | 500 | 0.0343 | 0.0335 | 0.0229 | 0.0327 | 0.0350 | 0.0233 | 0.0509 | 0.0495 | 0.0349 | 0.0352 |
| 200 | 500 | 0.0335 | 0.0321 | 0.0233 | 0.0324 | 0.0341 | 0.0235 | 0.0505 | 0.0484 | 0.0322 | 0.0344 |

Table 2. The empirical size of the t-test (nominal $5 \%$ ) for all the elements of $\Phi$ under IRb

| $N$ | $T$ | $\Phi_{11}$ | $\Phi_{12}$ | $\Phi_{13}$ | $\Phi_{21}$ | $\Phi_{22}$ | $\Phi_{23}$ | $\Phi_{31}$ | $\Phi_{32}$ | $\Phi_{33}$ | Ave |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 50 | 50 | 0.068 | 0.060 | 0.049 | 0.069 | 0.086 | 0.062 | 0.058 | 0.052 | 0.055 | 0.0621 |
| 100 | 50 | 0.063 | 0.055 | 0.055 | 0.062 | 0.071 | 0.066 | 0.063 | 0.055 | 0.055 | 0.0606 |
| 200 | 50 | 0.079 | 0.069 | 0.049 | 0.049 | 0.065 | 0.058 | 0.049 | 0.055 | 0.074 | 0.0608 |
| 50 | 100 | 0.085 | 0.046 | 0.044 | 0.065 | 0.072 | 0.060 | 0.042 | 0.067 | 0.054 | 0.0594 |
| 100 | 100 | 0.059 | 0.055 | 0.055 | 0.051 | 0.072 | 0.046 | 0.044 | 0.041 | 0.066 | 0.0543 |
| 200 | 100 | 0.060 | 0.045 | 0.050 | 0.055 | 0.074 | 0.040 | 0.034 | 0.055 | 0.060 | 0.0526 |
| 50 | 200 | 0.069 | 0.042 | 0.052 | 0.056 | 0.072 | 0.039 | 0.047 | 0.062 | 0.050 | 0.0543 |
| 100 | 200 | 0.058 | 0.057 | 0.048 | 0.058 | 0.069 | 0.052 | 0.042 | 0.040 | 0.071 | 0.0550 |
| 200 | 200 | 0.057 | 0.042 | 0.043 | 0.043 | 0.056 | 0.055 | 0.056 | 0.053 | 0.058 | 0.0514 |
| 50 | 500 | 0.070 | 0.043 | 0.055 | 0.043 | 0.081 | 0.058 | 0.049 | 0.064 | 0.053 | 0.0573 |
| 100 | 500 | 0.054 | 0.053 | 0.053 | 0.046 | 0.054 | 0.052 | 0.049 | 0.046 | 0.064 | 0.0523 |
| 200 | 500 | 0.055 | 0.047 | 0.056 | 0.049 | 0.046 | 0.053 | 0.057 | 0.048 | 0.048 | 0.0510 |

Table 3. The RMSEs of all the elements of $\hat{\Phi}$ under IRc

| $N$ | $T$ | $\Phi_{11}$ | $\Phi_{12}$ | $\Phi_{13}$ | $\Phi_{21}$ | $\Phi_{22}$ | $\Phi_{23}$ | $\Phi_{31}$ | $\Phi_{32}$ | $\Phi_{33}$ | Ave |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 50 | 50 | 0.1407 | 0.1397 | 0.1336 | 0.1354 | 0.1383 | 0.1258 | 0.1359 | 0.1281 | 0.1323 | 0.1344 |
| 100 | 50 | 0.1405 | 0.1403 | 0.1349 | 0.1365 | 0.1443 | 0.1299 | 0.1319 | 0.1419 | 0.1284 | 0.1365 |
| 200 | 50 | 0.1347 | 0.1290 | 0.1350 | 0.1394 | 0.1406 | 0.1295 | 0.1312 | 0.1323 | 0.1261 | 0.1331 |
| 50 | 100 | 0.0878 | 0.0868 | 0.0800 | 0.0897 | 0.0897 | 0.0849 | 0.0842 | 0.0859 | 0.0806 | 0.0855 |
| 100 | 100 | 0.0871 | 0.0869 | 0.0877 | 0.0810 | 0.0843 | 0.0838 | 0.0831 | 0.0871 | 0.0812 | 0.0847 |
| 200 | 100 | 0.0827 | 0.0840 | 0.0874 | 0.0813 | 0.0857 | 0.0852 | 0.0879 | 0.0878 | 0.0843 | 0.0851 |
| 50 | 200 | 0.0586 | 0.0562 | 0.0600 | 0.0571 | 0.0583 | 0.0568 | 0.0538 | 0.0571 | 0.0528 | 0.0567 |
| 100 | 200 | 0.0559 | 0.0566 | 0.0592 | 0.0558 | 0.0560 | 0.0586 | 0.0564 | 0.0567 | 0.0547 | 0.0567 |
| 200 | 200 | 0.0534 | 0.0583 | 0.0554 | 0.0577 | 0.0558 | 0.0565 | 0.0579 | 0.0562 | 0.0541 | 0.0562 |
| 50 | 500 | 0.0348 | 0.0343 | 0.0346 | 0.0334 | 0.0353 | 0.0364 | 0.0346 | 0.0348 | 0.0312 | 0.0344 |
| 100 | 500 | 0.0338 | 0.0337 | 0.0353 | 0.0344 | 0.0347 | 0.0353 | 0.0347 | 0.0359 | 0.0324 | 0.0344 |
| 200 | 500 | 0.0332 | 0.0339 | 0.0347 | 0.0341 | 0.0341 | 0.0369 | 0.0351 | 0.0370 | 0.0328 | 0.0346 |

Table 4. The empirical size of the t-test (nominal $5 \%$ ) for all the elements of $\Phi$ under IRc

| $N$ | $T$ | $\Phi_{11}$ | $\Phi_{12}$ | $\Phi_{13}$ | $\Phi_{21}$ | $\Phi_{22}$ | $\Phi_{23}$ | $\Phi_{31}$ | $\Phi_{32}$ | $\Phi_{33}$ | Ave |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 50 | 50 | 0.079 | 0.064 | 0.069 | 0.081 | 0.081 | 0.051 | 0.076 | 0.073 | 0.076 | 0.0722 |
| 100 | 50 | 0.088 | 0.078 | 0.065 | 0.071 | 0.089 | 0.069 | 0.074 | 0.078 | 0.087 | 0.0777 |
| 200 | 50 | 0.069 | 0.059 | 0.061 | 0.069 | 0.089 | 0.064 | 0.067 | 0.069 | 0.077 | 0.0693 |
| 50 | 100 | 0.078 | 0.064 | 0.051 | 0.070 | 0.074 | 0.058 | 0.057 | 0.050 | 0.062 | 0.0627 |
| 100 | 100 | 0.073 | 0.067 | 0.054 | 0.045 | 0.069 | 0.053 | 0.053 | 0.056 | 0.047 | 0.0574 |
| 200 | 100 | 0.055 | 0.055 | 0.070 | 0.058 | 0.068 | 0.066 | 0.058 | 0.066 | 0.065 | 0.0623 |
| 50 | 200 | 0.058 | 0.048 | 0.060 | 0.055 | 0.056 | 0.046 | 0.043 | 0.051 | 0.049 | 0.0518 |
| 100 | 200 | 0.060 | 0.046 | 0.067 | 0.050 | 0.059 | 0.058 | 0.064 | 0.064 | 0.066 | 0.0593 |
| 200 | 200 | 0.049 | 0.060 | 0.052 | 0.059 | 0.052 | 0.037 | 0.055 | 0.057 | 0.055 | 0.0529 |
| 50 | 500 | 0.055 | 0.046 | 0.046 | 0.046 | 0.066 | 0.057 | 0.058 | 0.060 | 0.048 | 0.0536 |
| 100 | 500 | 0.051 | 0.045 | 0.050 | 0.054 | 0.057 | 0.050 | 0.049 | 0.056 | 0.052 | 0.0516 |
| 200 | 500 | 0.051 | 0.051 | 0.045 | 0.050 | 0.058 | 0.067 | 0.047 | 0.060 | 0.047 | 0.0529 |

## Appendix: Technical materials for the asymptotic results

In this appendix, we provide the detailed derivations for the asymptotic results under IRa. The derivations for the asymptotic results under IRb and IRc as well as the theorems in Section 5 are delegated in the supplement. Throughout the appendix, we use $\bar{K}$ to denote $K+1$ and $\bar{T}$ to denote $T-K-1$. To facilitate the analysis, we introduce the following the auxiliary identification condition (an intermediate step analysis)

AU1 The underlying parameter values $\theta^{*}=\left(\Lambda^{*}, \Gamma^{*}, F^{*}, \Phi^{*}, \Sigma_{e e}\right)$ satisfy: $\frac{1}{N} \Lambda^{* /} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda^{*}=$ $Q^{*}, \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{*} f_{t}^{* \prime}=I_{r_{1}}$ and $\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{*} g_{t}^{\prime}=0$, where $Q^{*}$ is a diagonal matrix, whose diagonal elements are distinct and arranged in descending order.

## Appendix A: The asymptotic results of the QMLE

In this appendix, we show that the QMLE $\tilde{\lambda}_{i}, \tilde{\sigma}_{i}^{2}$ and $\tilde{f}_{t}$ are respectively consistent estimator of $\lambda_{i}^{*}, \sigma_{i}^{2}$ and $f_{t}^{*}$ in AU1.

Proposition A. 1 Under Assumptions A-D, together with AU1,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{*}=\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{*} f_{t}^{* \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{*} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right),  \tag{A.1}\\
& \tilde{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}^{*}=\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} e_{i t}\right),  \tag{A.2}\\
& \tilde{f}_{t}-f_{t}^{*}=\left(\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{T} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i}^{*} \lambda_{i}^{* \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i}^{*} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right),  \tag{A.3}\\
& \tilde{\sigma}_{i}^{2}-\sigma_{i}^{2}=\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(e_{i t}^{2}-\sigma_{i}^{2}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right), \tag{A.4}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof of Proposition A. 1 Write $z_{t}=\Lambda^{*} f_{t}^{*}+\Gamma^{*} g_{t}+e_{t}$ into matrix form,

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z=\Lambda^{*} F^{* \prime}+\Gamma^{*} G^{\prime}+e . \tag{A.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Post-multiplying $\mathbb{M}_{G}=I_{T}-G\left(G^{\prime} G\right)^{-1} G^{\prime}$ on both sides, together with $F^{* \prime} G=0$ by AU1, we have

$$
Z \mathbb{M}_{G}=\Lambda^{*} F^{* \prime}+e \mathbb{M}_{G}
$$

Let $Y=Z \mathbb{M}_{G}$ and $y_{t}$ denotes the $t$-th column of $Y$. The above equation is equivalent to

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{t}=\Lambda^{*} f_{t}^{*}+e_{t}-e G\left(G^{\prime} G\right)^{-1} g_{t} \tag{A.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Bai and Li (2012) derive the asymptotic representations of $\tilde{\lambda}_{i}, \tilde{f}_{t}, \tilde{\sigma}_{i}^{2}$ under the case that $g_{t} \equiv 1$. However, when $g_{t}$ is a general random variable, as like in the present context, the derivation is the same since term $e G\left(G^{\prime} G\right)^{-1} g_{t}$ is essentially negligible. Using the arguments of Bai and Li (2012) under IC3, we obtain (A.1), (A.3) and (A.4). Consider (A.2). Substituting $z_{i t}=\lambda_{i}^{*} f_{t}^{*}+\gamma_{i}^{* \prime} g_{t}+e_{i t}$ into $\tilde{\gamma}_{i}=\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t}\left(z_{i t}-\tilde{\lambda}_{i}^{\prime} \tilde{f}_{t}\right)\right)$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\tilde{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}^{*}= & \left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} e_{i t}\right)-\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} f_{t}^{* \prime}\right)\left(\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{*}\right) \\
& -\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t}\left(\tilde{f}_{t}-f_{t}^{*}\right)^{\prime}\right) \tilde{\lambda}_{i}
\end{aligned}
$$

The second term of the right hand side is zero by $\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} f_{t}^{* \prime}=G^{\prime} F^{*}=0$. Consider the third term. Notice

$$
\begin{aligned}
\tilde{f}_{t} & =\left(\tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\right)^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} y_{t} \\
& =\left(\tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\right)^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1}\left[z_{t}-\left(\sum_{s=1}^{T} z_{s} g_{s}^{\prime}\right)\left(\sum_{s=1}^{T} g_{s} g_{s}^{\prime}\right)^{-1} g_{t}\right] \\
& =\left(\tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\right)^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1}\left[\Lambda^{*} f_{t}^{*}+e_{t}-\left(\sum_{s=1}^{T} e_{s} g_{s}^{\prime}\right)\left(\sum_{s=1}^{T} g_{s} g_{s}^{\prime}\right)^{-1} g_{t}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

Then it follows

$$
\begin{align*}
\tilde{f}_{t}-f_{t}^{*}= & -A^{* \prime} f_{t}^{*}+\left(\tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\right)^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} e_{t} \\
& -\left(\tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\right)^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1}\left(\sum_{s=1}^{T} e_{s} g_{s}^{\prime}\right)\left(\sum_{s=1}^{T} g_{s} g_{s}^{\prime}\right)^{-1} g_{t} \tag{A.7}
\end{align*}
$$

where $A^{*}=\left(\tilde{\Lambda}-\Lambda^{*}\right)^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\left(\tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\right)^{-1}$.
Given the above expression, together with $\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} f_{t}^{* \prime}=0$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t}\left(\tilde{f}_{t}-f_{t}^{*}\right)^{\prime}=0 \tag{A.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then (A.2) follows. This completes the proof.

Lemma A. 1 Under Assumptions $A-D$,
(a) $\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{h}_{t-p} \tilde{h}_{t-q}^{\prime}-\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} h_{t-p}^{*} h_{t-q}^{* \prime}=O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$, for $p, q=0, \ldots, K$
(b) $\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\tilde{h}_{t-p}-h_{t-p}^{*}\right) \tilde{h}_{t-q}^{\prime}=O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$, for $p, q=0,1, \ldots, K$
(c) $\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{*} \tilde{h}_{t-p}^{\prime}-\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{*} h_{t-p}^{* \prime}=O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$, for $p=1, \ldots, K$
where $\tilde{h}_{t}=\left(\tilde{f}_{t}^{\prime}, g_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}$ and $h_{t}^{*}=\left(f_{t}^{* \prime}, h_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}$.
Proof of Lemma A. 1 Consider (a). By the definitions of $\tilde{h}_{t}$ and $h_{t}^{*}$, the left hand side of (a) is equal to

$$
\left[\begin{array}{cc}
J_{11} & J_{12} \\
J_{21} & 0
\end{array}\right]
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& J_{11}=\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\tilde{f}_{t-p}-f_{t-p}^{*}\right)\left(\tilde{f}_{t-q}-f_{t-q}^{*}\right)^{\prime}+\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\tilde{f}_{t-p}-f_{t-p}^{*}\right) f_{t-q}^{* \prime} \\
& +\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} f_{t-p}^{*}\left(\tilde{f}_{t-q}-f_{t-q}^{*}\right)^{\prime} ; \\
& J_{12}=\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\tilde{f}_{t-p}-f_{t-p}^{*}\right) g_{t-q}^{\prime} ; \quad J_{21}=\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} g_{t-p}\left(\tilde{f}_{t-q}-f_{t-q}^{*}\right)^{\prime} .
\end{aligned}
$$

The first term of $J_{11}$ is $O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-2}\right)$, as shown in Bai an Li (2012). Consider the second term. By (A.7), $\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\tilde{f}_{t-p}-f_{t-p}^{*}\right) f_{t-q}^{* \prime}$ is equal to

$$
\begin{gathered}
-A^{* \prime} \frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} f_{t-p}^{*} f_{t-q}^{* \prime}+\left(\tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\right)^{-1} \frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} e_{t-p} f_{t-q}^{* \prime} \\
-\left(\tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{s=1}^{T} \tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} e_{s} g_{s}^{\prime}\right)\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{s=1}^{T} g_{s} g_{s}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} g_{t-p} f_{t-q}^{* \prime}\right)
\end{gathered}
$$

The first term of the above expression is $O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$ by $\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} f_{t-p}^{*} f_{t-q}^{* \prime}$ $=O_{p}(1)$ and $A=O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$, as shown in Bai and Li (2012). The second and third terms are also $O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$, which can be proved similarly as Lemma C.1(e) of Bai and Li (2012). Given these results, the second term of $J_{11}$ is $O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$. The last term can be proved to be the same magnitude by the similar arguments. Summarizing these results, we have $J_{11}=O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$. Terms $J_{12}$ and $J_{21}$ can be proved to be $O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$ similarly as $J_{11}$. Then (a) follows.

Consider (b). The left hand side of (b) is equal to

$$
\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\tilde{f}_{t-p}-f_{t-p}^{*}\right) \tilde{f}_{t-q}^{\prime} & \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\tilde{f}_{t-p}-f_{t-p}^{*}\right) g_{t-q}^{\prime} \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right]
$$

The two none-zero terms of the above are $O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$, which are shown in (a). Then (b) follows.

Consider (c). The left hand side of (c) is equal to

$$
\left[\begin{array}{c}
\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{*}\left(\tilde{f}_{t-p}-f_{t-p}^{*}\right)^{\prime} \\
0
\end{array}\right] .
$$

So it suffices to consider term $\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{*}\left(\tilde{f}_{t-p}-f_{t-p}^{*}\right)^{\prime}$, which, by (A.7), can be written as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{*} f_{t-p}^{* \prime} A^{*}+\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{*} e_{t-p}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\left(\tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\right)^{-1} \\
- & \frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{*} g_{t-p}^{\prime}\left(\sum_{s=1}^{T} g_{s} g_{s}^{\prime}\right)^{-1} \sum_{s=1}^{T} g_{s} e_{s}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\left(\tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\right)^{-1}
\end{aligned}
$$

Both $\frac{1}{N \bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{*} e_{t-p}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}$ and $\frac{1}{N \bar{T}} \sum_{s=1}^{T} g_{s} e_{s}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}$ can be proved to be $O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)$ $+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$ similarly as Lemma C.1(e) of Bai and Li (2012). Given these results, together with $A=O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$ and $\left(\tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\right)^{-1}=O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)$, we have

$$
\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{*}\left(\tilde{f}_{t}-f_{t}^{*}\right)^{\prime}=O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) .
$$

Then (c) follows.
Proposition A. 2 Under Assumptions A-D, together with the identification condition AU1, for each $k=1,2, \ldots, K$, we have

$$
\tilde{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}^{*}=\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{*} \psi_{t}^{* \prime}\right)\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{*} \psi_{t}^{* \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(i_{k} \otimes I_{r}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

where $\psi_{t}^{*}=\left(h_{t-1}^{* \prime}, h_{t-2}^{* \prime}, \ldots, h_{t-K}^{* \prime}\right)^{\prime}$ and $i_{k}$ is the $k$-th column of the $K \times K$ identity matrix.
Proof of Proposition A. 2 Let $\Phi^{*}=\left(\Phi_{1}^{*}, \Phi_{2}^{*}, \ldots, \Phi_{K}^{*}\right)$ and $\tilde{\Phi}$ be defined similarly. Notice $\tilde{\Phi}$ is obtained by running the regression

$$
\tilde{h}_{t}=\Phi_{1} \tilde{h}_{t-1}+\Phi_{2} \tilde{h}_{t-2}+\cdots+\Phi_{K} \tilde{h}_{t-K}+\text { error }
$$

So we have

$$
\tilde{\Phi}=\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{h}_{t} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{\psi}_{t} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}
$$

where $\tilde{\psi}_{t}=\left(\tilde{h}_{t-1}^{\prime}, \tilde{h}_{t-2}^{\prime}, \ldots, \tilde{h}_{t-K}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}$. By $h_{t}^{*}=\Phi^{*} \psi_{t}^{*}+u_{t}^{*}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\tilde{\Phi}-\Phi^{*} & =\left[\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(u_{t}^{*}+\left(\tilde{h}_{t}-h_{t}^{*}\right)-\Phi^{*}\left(\tilde{\psi}_{t}-\psi_{t}^{*}\right)\right) \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right]\left[\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{\psi}_{t} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right]^{-1} \\
& =\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(u_{t}^{*}+\left(\tilde{h}_{t}-h_{t}^{*}\right)-\Phi^{*}\left(\tilde{\psi}_{t}-\psi_{t}^{*}\right)\right) \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right]\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{\psi}_{t} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right]^{-1}
\end{aligned}
$$

By Lemma A.1(a) and (b),

$$
\begin{aligned}
& {\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\tilde{h}_{t}-h_{t}^{*}\right) \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right]\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{\psi}_{t} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right]^{-1}=O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)} \\
& {\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\tilde{\psi}_{t}-\psi_{t}^{*}\right) \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right]\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{\psi}_{t} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right]^{-1}=O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

By Lemma A.1(a) and (c),

$$
\begin{aligned}
{\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{*} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right]\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{\psi}_{t} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right]^{-1}=} & {\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{*} \psi_{t}^{* \prime}\right]\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{*} \psi_{t}^{* \prime}\right]^{-1} } \\
& +O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Given this result, we have

$$
\tilde{\Phi}-\Phi^{*}=\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{*} \psi_{t}^{* \prime}\right)\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{*} \psi_{t}^{* \prime}\right)^{-1}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

Post-multiplying $i_{k} \otimes I_{r}$ on both sides gives Proposition A.2.

Now we consider the following condition (denoted by AU2), in which the loading restrictions are the same as AU1 but factor restrictions are imposed on the population.

AU2 The underlying parameter values $\theta^{\star}=\left(\Lambda^{\star}, \Gamma^{\star}, F^{\star}, \Phi^{\star}, \Sigma_{e e}\right)$ satisfy: $\frac{1}{N} \Lambda^{\star} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda^{\star}=$ $Q^{\star}, E\left(f_{t}^{\star} f_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)=I_{r_{1}}$ and $E\left(f_{t}^{\star} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)=0$, where $Q^{\star}$ is a diagonal matrix, whose diagonal elements are distinct and arranged in descending order.

Note that the superscript "stars" in $\theta^{\star}$ and $\theta^{*}$ are different. Different identification restrictions imply different notations. Because AU1 and AU2 are asymptotically the same (the former with sample moment restriction $\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t} f_{t} f_{t}^{\prime}=I_{r_{1}}$ and the latter with population moment restriction $\left.E\left(f_{t} f_{t}^{\prime}\right)=I_{r_{1}}\right), \theta^{\star}$ and $\theta^{*}$ are also asymptotically the same. That is why the MLE is also consistent for $\theta^{\star}$, which will be proved below.

The following lemma is useful to our analysis.
Lemma A. 2 Let $Q$ be an $r \times r$ matrix satisfying

$$
\begin{aligned}
Q Q^{\prime} & =I_{r} \\
Q^{\prime} V Q & =D
\end{aligned}
$$

where $V$ is an $r \times r$ diagonal matrix with strictly positive and distinct elements, arranged in decreasing order, and $D$ is also diagonal. Then $Q$ must be a diagonal matrix with elements either -1 or 1 and $V=D$.

Lemma A. 2 is proved in Bai and Li (2012). The following proposition summarizes the asymptotic results under AU2. It shows that the limiting distributions under AU2 have been changed.

Proposition A. 3 Under Assumptions A-D, together with the identification condition AU2, when $N, T \rightarrow \infty$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{\star}= V^{\star} \lambda_{i}^{\star}+\Delta_{f f}^{\star-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{\star} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)  \tag{A.9}\\
& \tilde{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}^{\star}= W^{\star} \lambda_{i}^{\star}+\Delta_{g g}^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)  \tag{A.10}\\
& \tilde{f}_{t}-f_{t}^{\star}=-V^{\star \prime} f_{t}^{\star}-W^{\star \prime} g_{t}+\left(\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i}^{\star} \lambda_{i}^{\star \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i}^{\star} e_{i t}\right) \\
& \quad \quad+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \tag{A.11}
\end{align*}
$$

where $W^{\star}=\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f}^{\star}$ with $\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f}^{\star}=E\left(g_{t} f_{t}^{\star \prime}\right) ; \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{\star}=E\left(f_{t}^{\star} f_{t}^{\star \prime}\right) ; V^{\star}$ is an $r_{1} \times r_{1}$ matrix, which is $O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)$.

Proof of Proposition A.3. Notice that

$$
\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{\star}=\left(\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{*}\right)+\left(\lambda_{i}^{*}-\lambda_{i}^{\star}\right) .
$$

We show $\lambda_{i}^{*}$ and $\lambda_{i}^{\star}$ are close to each other because AU1 and AU2 are asymptotically the same. Different identification restrictions imply different rotations. Let $R^{\star}$ be the rotation matrix, which transform $\left(\lambda_{i}^{* \prime}, \gamma_{i}^{* \prime}\right)^{\prime}$ to $\left(\lambda_{i}^{\star \prime}, \gamma_{i}^{\star \prime}\right)^{\prime}$. Then we have

$$
\begin{align*}
z_{t} & =\Lambda^{\star} f_{t}^{\star}+\Gamma^{\star} g_{t}+e_{t}=\left[\Lambda^{\star}, \Gamma^{\star}\right]\left[\begin{array}{l}
f_{t}^{\star} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]+e_{t}  \tag{A.12}\\
& =\left[\Lambda^{*}, \Gamma^{*}\right]\left[\begin{array}{ll}
R_{11}^{\star \prime} & R_{21}^{\star 1} \\
R_{12}^{\star \prime} & R_{22}^{\prime \prime}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{ll}
R_{11}^{\star 1} & R_{21}^{\star \prime} \\
R_{12}^{\star \prime} & R_{22}^{\star}
\end{array}\right]^{-1}\left[\begin{array}{l}
f_{t}^{*} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]+e_{t}
\end{align*}
$$

As mentioned in the main text, due to the fact that the factors $g_{t}$ are observed, matrix $R_{12}^{\star \prime}$ is fixed to 0 and matrix $R_{22}^{\star \prime}$ is fixed to $I_{r_{2}}$. So equation (A.12) reduces to

$$
\begin{aligned}
z_{t} & =\left[\Lambda^{\star}, \Gamma^{\star}\right]\left[\begin{array}{c}
f_{t}^{\star} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]+e_{t} \\
& =\left[\Lambda^{*}, \Gamma^{*}\right]\left[\begin{array}{cc}
R_{11}^{\star \prime} & R_{21}^{\star \prime} \\
0 & I_{r_{2}}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{cc}
R_{11}^{\star \prime-1} & -R_{11}^{\star \prime-1} R_{21}^{\star \prime} \\
0 & I_{r_{2}}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{c}
f_{t}^{*} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]+e_{t}
\end{aligned}
$$

This gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda_{i}^{\star}=R_{11}^{\star} \lambda_{i}^{*}, \quad \gamma_{i}^{\star}=R_{21}^{\star} \lambda_{i}^{*}+\gamma_{i}^{*}, \quad f_{t}^{\star}=R_{11}^{\star \prime-1} f_{t}^{*}-R_{11}^{\star \prime-1} R_{21}^{\star \prime} g_{t} . \tag{A.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

The last equation of (A.13) can also be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{t}^{*}=R_{11}^{\star \prime} f_{t}^{\star}+R_{21}^{\star \prime} g_{t} . \tag{A.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Post-multiplying $g_{t}^{\prime}$ on both sides and taking summation over $t$, by $\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} f_{t}^{* \prime}=0$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{21}^{\star}=-\left[\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right]^{-1}\left[\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} f_{t}^{\star \prime}\right] R_{11}^{\star}, \tag{A.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting (A.15) into (A.14),

$$
f_{t}^{*}=R_{11}^{\star \prime}\left(f_{t}^{\star}-\left[\sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{\star} g_{t}^{\prime}\right]\left[\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right]^{-1} g_{t}\right) .
$$

By $T^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{*} f_{t}^{* \prime}=I_{r_{1}}$, the preceding equation implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{\star} f_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)-\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{\star} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} f_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)=R_{11}^{\star \prime-1} R_{11}^{\star-1} \tag{A.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

The first equation of (A.13) shows $\Lambda^{\star}=\Lambda^{*} R_{11}^{\star}$. So we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{11}^{\star-1} Q^{\star} R_{11}^{\star-1}=R_{11}^{\star-1}\left(\frac{1}{N} \Lambda^{\star} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda^{\star}\right) R_{11}^{\star \prime-1}=\frac{1}{N} \Lambda^{* \prime} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda^{*}=\text { diag. } \tag{A.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Consider (A.16). By $E\left(f_{t}^{\star} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)=0$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{\star} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} f_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)=O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \tag{A.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

The left hand side of (A.16) converges to $I_{r_{1}}$ in probability. Thus $R_{11}^{\star \prime-1} R_{11}^{\star-1} \xrightarrow{p} I_{r_{1}}$. Applying Lemma A. 2 to $R_{11}^{\star /-1} R_{11}^{\star-1} \xrightarrow{p} I_{r_{1}}$ and $R_{11}^{\star-1} Q^{\star} R_{11}^{\star-1}=\frac{1}{N} \Lambda^{* \prime} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda^{*}$ with $Q=$ $R_{11}^{\star /-1}, V=Q^{\star}$ and $D=\frac{1}{N} \Lambda^{* \prime} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda^{*}$, we have $R_{11}^{\star-1}$ converges to a matrix whose diagonal elements either 1 or -1 . Since we assume that the sign problem is precluded in our analysis, it follows $R_{11}^{\star-1} \xrightarrow{p} I_{r_{1}}$. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
U^{\star}=R_{11}^{\star-1}-I_{r_{1}} \tag{A.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Apparently, $U^{\star} \xrightarrow{p} 0$. Then (A.16) is equivalent to

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left[f_{t}^{\star} f_{t}^{\star \prime}-I_{\left.r_{1}\right]}\right]\right) & -\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{\star} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} f_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)  \tag{A.20}\\
& =U^{\star}+U^{\star \prime}+U^{\star \prime} U^{\star} .
\end{align*}
$$

Also, (A.17) is equivalent to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Ndg}\left(U^{\star} Q^{\star}+Q^{\star} U^{\star \prime}+U^{\star} Q^{\star} U^{\star \prime}\right)=0 \tag{A.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\operatorname{Ndg}\{\cdot\}$ denotes the non-diagonal elements of the argument. Neglecting the terms $U^{\star} Q^{\star} U^{\star \prime}$ and $U^{\star \prime} U^{\star}$ since they are of smaller order than $U^{\star}$, we can uniquely determine matrix $U^{\star}$ by solving the equation system (A.20) and (A.21). Let $V^{\star}$ be the leading term
of $U^{\star}$. It is easy to see that $U^{\star}=O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right), V^{\star}=O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)$ and $U^{\star}=V^{\star}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$. This result gives $R_{11}^{\star-1}=I_{r_{1}}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)$ by (A.19), which, together with (A.15), implies

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{21}^{\star}=-\left[\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right]^{-1}\left[\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} f_{t}^{\star \prime}\right]+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) & =-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f}^{\star}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)  \tag{A.22}\\
& \triangleq-W^{\star}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)=O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Now consider the asymptotic representation of $\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{\star}$. Notice

$$
\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{\star}=\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-R_{11}^{\star} \lambda_{i}^{*}=\left(\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{*}\right)-\left(R_{11}^{\star}-I_{r_{1}}\right) \lambda_{i}^{*}
$$

By (A.1), the above result is equivalent to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{\star}=\left[\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{*} f_{t}^{* \prime}\right]^{-1}\left[\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{*} e_{i t}\right]-\left(R_{11}^{\star}-I_{r_{1}}\right) \lambda_{i}^{*}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right) \tag{A.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (A.14), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{*} f_{t}^{* \prime} & =\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{\star} f_{t}^{\star \prime}+o_{p}(1)=\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{\star}+o_{p}(1) \\
\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{*} e_{i t} & =\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{\star} e_{i t}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Notice $R_{11}^{\star}=\left(I_{r_{1}}+U^{\star}\right)^{-1}=I_{r_{1}}-U^{\star}\left(I_{r_{1}}+V^{\star}\right)^{-1}=I_{r_{1}}-U^{\star} R_{11}^{\star}$. Then it follows

$$
-\left(R_{11}^{\star}-I_{r_{1}}\right) \lambda_{i}^{*}=U^{\star} \lambda_{i}^{\star} .
$$

Given the above three results, together with $U^{\star}=O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$ and (A.23), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{\star}=V^{\star} \lambda_{i}^{\star}+\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{\star} f_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{\star} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right) \tag{A.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

We then consider $\tilde{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}$. By (A.13), we have $\tilde{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}^{\star}=\tilde{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}^{*}-R_{21}^{\star} \lambda_{i}^{*}$. Then, by (A.3),

$$
\tilde{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}^{\star}=-R_{21}^{\star} \lambda_{i}^{*}+\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} e_{i t}\right) .
$$

Substituting (A.15) into the above equation and noticing $\lambda_{i}^{\star}=R_{11}^{\star} \lambda_{i}^{*}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}^{\star}=\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t}\left(e_{i t}+f_{t}^{\star \prime} \lambda_{i}^{\star}\right)\right)=W^{\star} \lambda_{i}^{\star}+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \tag{A.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now consider $\tilde{f}_{t}-f_{t}^{\star}$. By (A.13),

$$
\tilde{f}_{t}-f_{t}^{\star}=\tilde{f}_{t}-R_{11}^{\star-1} f_{t}^{*}+R_{11}^{\star-1} R_{21}^{\star \prime} g_{t}
$$

By $R_{11}^{\star \prime-1}=I_{r_{1}}+U^{\star \prime}$, the above equation is equal to

$$
\tilde{f}_{t}-f_{t}^{\star}=\left(\tilde{f}_{t}-f_{t}^{*}\right)-U^{\star \prime} f_{t}^{*}+R_{11}^{\star \prime-1} R_{21}^{\star \prime} g_{t}
$$

Substituting (A.3) into the above result, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\tilde{f}_{t}-f_{t}^{\star}= & -U^{\star \prime} f_{t}^{*}+R_{11}^{\star \prime-1} R_{21}^{\star \prime} g_{t}+\left(\sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i}^{*} \lambda_{i}^{* \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i}^{*} e_{i t}^{\prime}\right)  \tag{A.26}\\
& +O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

However, by (A.13) together with $R_{11}^{\star}=\left(I_{r_{1}}+U^{\star}\right)^{-1}$ and $U^{\star}=O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)$, we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i}^{*} \lambda_{i}^{* \prime}=\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i}^{\star} \lambda_{i}^{\star \prime}+o_{p}(1) \\
\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i}^{*} e_{i t}=\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i}^{\star} e_{i t}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)
\end{gathered}
$$

In addition, by (A.14), (A.12) and $U^{\star}=V^{\star}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$, we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
U^{\star \prime} f_{t}^{*}=V^{\star \prime} f_{t}^{\star}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \\
R_{11}^{\star \prime-1} R_{21}^{\star \prime} g_{t}=-\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{\star} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1} g_{t}=-W^{\star \prime} g_{t}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
\end{gathered}
$$

Given the above results, by (A.26), we have the last expression of Proposition A.3. This completes the proof of Proposition A.3.

Proposition A. 4 Under Assumptions A-D, together with the identification condition AU2, we have

$$
\tilde{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}^{\star}=\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{\star} \psi_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{\star} \psi_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(i_{k} \otimes I_{r}\right)-B^{\star \prime} \Phi_{k}^{\star}+\Phi_{k}^{\star} B^{\star \prime}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

where $B^{\star}$ is defined as

$$
B^{\star}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
V^{\star} & 0 \\
W^{\star} & 0
\end{array}\right] .
$$

Proof of Proposition A.4. Notice

$$
h_{t}^{*}=\Phi_{1}^{*} h_{t-1}^{*}+\Phi_{2}^{*} h_{t-2}^{*}+\cdots+\Phi_{K}^{*} h_{t-K}^{*}+u_{t}^{*},
$$

and

$$
h_{t}^{\star}=\Phi_{1}^{\star} h_{t-1}^{\star}+\Phi_{2}^{\star} h_{t-2}^{\star}+\cdots+\Phi_{K}^{\star} h_{t-K}^{\star}+u_{t}^{\star} .
$$

By $h_{t}^{\star}=R^{\star /-1} h_{t}^{*}$, it follows that $\Phi_{k}^{\star}=R^{\star \prime-1} \Phi_{k}^{*} R^{\star \prime}$. Thus,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}^{\star}=\tilde{\Phi}_{k}-R^{\star \prime-1} \Phi_{k}^{*} R^{\star \prime} \tag{A.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

However, by $R_{11}^{\star-1}=I_{r_{1}}+V^{\star}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$ and $R_{21}^{\star}=-W^{\star}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
R^{\star \prime-1} & =\left[\begin{array}{cc}
R_{11}^{\star \prime-1} & -R_{11}^{\star \prime-1} R_{21}^{\star \prime} \\
0 & I_{r_{2}}
\end{array}\right]=I_{r}+\left[\begin{array}{cc}
V^{\star \prime} & W^{\star \prime} \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right]+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)  \tag{A.28}\\
& =I_{r}+B^{\star \prime}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Given the above result, we have $R^{\star \prime}=I_{r}-B^{\star \prime}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$. Substituting the preceding two results into (A.27), we have

$$
\tilde{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}^{\star}=\tilde{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}^{*}-B^{\star \prime} \Phi_{k}^{*}+\Phi_{k}^{*} B^{\star \prime}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) .
$$

By Proposition A.2, we can rewrite the above result as

$$
\tilde{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}^{\star}=\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{*} \psi_{t}^{* \prime}\right)\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{*} \psi_{t}^{* \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(i_{k} \otimes I_{r}\right)-B^{\star \prime} \Phi_{k}^{*}+\Phi_{k}^{*} B^{\star \prime}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) .
$$

By $h_{t}^{\star}=R^{\star l-1} h_{t}^{*}$, we have $h_{t}^{*}=R^{\star \prime} h_{t}^{\star}=h_{t}^{\star}+\left(R^{\star}-I_{r}\right)^{\prime} h_{t}^{\star}$. Given this result, together with the fact that $R^{\star}-I_{r}=O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)$, we have

$$
\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{*} \psi_{t}^{* \prime}\right)\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{*} \psi_{t}^{* \prime}\right)^{-1}=\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{\star} \psi_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{\star} \psi_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)^{-1}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

and

$$
B^{\star \prime} \Phi_{k}^{*}=B^{\star \prime} \Phi_{k}^{\star}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right), \quad \Phi_{k}^{*} B^{\star \prime}=\Phi_{k}^{\star} B^{\star \prime}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

Given these results, we have

$$
\tilde{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}^{\star}=\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{\star} \psi_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{\star} \psi_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(i_{k} \otimes I_{r}\right)-B^{\star \prime} \Phi_{k}^{\star}+\Phi_{k}^{\star} B^{\star \prime}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

This completes the proof.

## Appendix B: The asymptotic results and their proofs under IRa

As in the main text, we use $(\Lambda, \Gamma, F)$ to denote the underlying parameters satisfying IRa. Let $R$ be the rotation matrix which transforms $\left(\lambda_{i}^{\star \prime}, \gamma_{i}^{\star \prime}\right)^{\prime}$ into $\left(\lambda_{i}^{\prime}, \gamma_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}$. Then we have

$$
\begin{align*}
z_{t} & =\Lambda f_{t}+\Gamma g_{t}+e_{t}=[\Lambda, \Gamma]\left[\begin{array}{l}
f_{t} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]+e_{t} \\
& =\left[\Lambda^{\star}, \Gamma^{\star}\right]\left[\begin{array}{cc}
R_{11}^{\prime} & R_{21}^{\prime} \\
0 & I_{r_{2}}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{cc}
R_{11}^{-1} & -R_{11}^{\prime-1} R_{21}^{\prime} \\
0 & I_{r_{2}}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{l}
f_{t}^{\star} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]+e_{t} \tag{B.1}
\end{align*}
$$

Then we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda_{i}=R_{11} \lambda_{i}^{\star}, \quad \gamma_{i}=\gamma_{i}^{\star}+R_{21} \lambda_{i}^{\star}, \quad f_{t}=R_{11}^{\prime-1} f_{t}^{\star}-R_{11}^{\prime-1} R_{21}^{\prime} g_{t} . \tag{B.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

The last equation in (B.2) can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{t}^{\star}=R_{11}^{\prime} f_{t}+R_{21}^{\prime} g_{t} \tag{B.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that the rotation matrix $R$ is nonrandom. To see this, both AU2 and IRa impose restrictions on the loadings and the covariance of $h_{t}$. So the rotation matrix $R$, which transform the underlying parameters from AU2 to IRa, only involves loadings and covariance of $h_{t}$. Thus it is nonrandom. This is in contrast with $R^{\star}$, which is random since AU1 involves $f_{t}$.

Post-multiplying $g_{t}^{\prime}$ on both sides and taking the expectation, by $E\left(f_{t}^{\star} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)=0$, we have

$$
R_{21}=-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} R_{11} .
$$

Define $\phi_{t}=R_{11}^{\prime-1} f_{t}^{\star}$. From the above results, $\phi$ has an alternative expression

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi_{t}=f_{t}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} g_{t} . \tag{B.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

The following lemmas will be used in the subsequent proof.
Lemma B. 1 For any compatible matrices $\mathcal{A}$ and $\mathcal{B}$ and their corresponding estimates $\hat{\mathcal{A}}$ and $\hat{\mathcal{B}}$, we have

$$
\hat{\mathcal{A}} \hat{\mathcal{B}}^{-1} \hat{\mathcal{A}}^{\prime}-\mathcal{A} \mathcal{B}^{-1} \mathcal{A}^{\prime}=(\hat{\mathcal{A}}-\mathcal{A}) \mathcal{B}^{-1} \mathcal{A}^{\prime}+\mathcal{A B}^{-1}(\hat{\mathcal{A}}-\mathcal{A})^{\prime}-\mathcal{A} \mathcal{B}^{-1}(\hat{\mathcal{B}}-\mathcal{B}) \mathcal{B}^{-1} \mathcal{A}^{\prime}+R
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
R= & -(\hat{\mathcal{A}}-\mathcal{A}) \hat{\mathcal{B}}^{-1}(\hat{\mathcal{B}}-\mathcal{B}) \mathcal{B}^{-1} \mathcal{A}^{\prime}+(\hat{\mathcal{A}}-\mathcal{A}) \hat{\mathcal{B}}^{-1}(\hat{\mathcal{A}}-\mathcal{A})^{\prime} \\
& +\mathcal{A} \hat{\mathcal{B}}^{-1}(\hat{\mathcal{B}}-\mathcal{B}) \mathcal{B}^{-1}(\hat{\mathcal{B}}-\mathcal{B}) \mathcal{B}^{-1} \hat{\mathcal{A}}^{\prime}-\mathcal{A} \hat{\mathcal{B}}^{-1}(\hat{\mathcal{B}}-\mathcal{B}) \mathcal{B}^{-1}(\hat{\mathcal{A}}-\mathcal{A})^{\prime} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Lemma B. 1 can be proved easily by matrix algebra.
Lemma B. 2 Under Assumptions A-D, we have
(a) $\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \tilde{H}^{\prime} M_{\tilde{\Psi}} \tilde{H}-\frac{1}{\bar{T}} H^{* \prime} M_{\Psi^{*}} H^{*}=O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$
(b) $\frac{1}{\bar{T}} H^{\star \prime} M_{\Psi^{\star}} H^{\star}-\frac{1}{\bar{T}} H^{* \prime} M_{\Psi^{*}} H^{*}=B^{\star \prime} \Omega^{\star}+\Omega^{\star} B^{\star}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$
(c) $\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \tilde{H}^{\prime} M_{\tilde{\Psi}} \tilde{H}-\frac{1}{\bar{T}} H^{\star \prime} M_{\Psi^{\star}} H^{\star}=-B^{\star \prime} \Omega^{\star}-\Omega^{\star} B^{\star}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$
where $\frac{1}{T} \tilde{H}^{\prime} M_{\tilde{\Psi}} \tilde{H}$ is defined as

$$
\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \tilde{H}^{\prime} M_{\tilde{\Psi}} \tilde{H}=\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{h}_{t} \tilde{h}_{t}^{\prime}-\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{h}_{t} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{\psi}_{t} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{\psi}_{t} \tilde{h}_{t}^{\prime}\right),
$$

and $\frac{1}{T} H^{* \prime} M_{\Psi^{*}} H^{*}$ and $\frac{1}{T} H^{\star \prime} M_{\Psi^{\star}} H^{\star}$ are defined similarly.
Proof of Lemma B.2. Consider (a). By Lemma A.1(a), we have

$$
\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{h}_{t} \tilde{h}_{t}^{\prime}-\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} h_{t}^{*} h_{t}^{* \prime}=O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{h}_{t} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}-\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} h_{t}^{*} \psi_{t}^{* \prime}=O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \\
& \frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{\psi}_{t} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}-\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{*} \psi_{t}^{* \prime}=O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Given the above results, together with Lemma B.1, we have (a).
Consider (b). By $h_{t}^{\star}=R^{\star /-1} h_{t}^{*}$, we have $\psi_{t}^{\star}=\left(I_{K} \otimes R^{\star \prime-1}\right) \psi_{t}^{*}$. This gives

$$
\frac{1}{\bar{T}} H^{\star \prime} M_{\Psi^{\star}} H^{\star}=\frac{1}{\bar{T}} H^{\star \prime} M_{\Psi^{*}} H^{\star}
$$

By $H^{\star}=H^{*} R^{\star-1}$, we have

$$
\frac{1}{\bar{T}} H^{\star \prime} M_{\Psi^{*}} H^{\star}=R^{\star \prime-1}\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} H^{* \prime} M_{\Psi^{*}} H^{*}\right) R^{\star-1}
$$

However, (A.28) shows that $R^{\star-1}=I_{r}+B^{\star \prime}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$. Thus, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{1}{\bar{T}} H^{\star \prime} M_{\Psi^{\star}} H^{\star} & -\frac{1}{\bar{T}} H^{* \prime} M_{\Psi^{*}} H^{*}=R^{\star \prime-1}\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} H^{* \prime} M_{\Psi^{*}} H^{*}\right) R^{\star-1}-\frac{1}{\bar{T}} H^{* \prime} M_{\Psi^{*}} H^{*}  \tag{B.5}\\
& =B^{\star \prime}\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} H^{* \prime} M_{\Psi^{*}} H^{*}\right)+\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} H^{* \prime} M_{\Psi^{*}} H^{*}\right) B^{\star}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Now consider $\frac{1}{\bar{T}} H^{* \prime} M_{\Psi^{*}} H^{*}$, which is equivalent to

$$
\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{*} u_{t}^{* \prime}-\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{*} \psi_{t}^{* \prime}\right)\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{*} \psi_{t}^{* \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{*} u_{t}^{* \prime}\right)
$$

The second term is $O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$. The first term, by $u_{t}^{\star}=R^{\star \prime-1} u_{t}^{*}$ and $R^{\star \prime}=I_{r}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)$, is equal to

$$
R^{\star \prime}\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{\star} u_{t}^{\star \prime}\right) R^{\star}=\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{\star} u_{t}^{\star \prime}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)=\Omega^{\star}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right) .
$$

Then it follows

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{\bar{T}} H^{* \prime} M_{\Psi^{*}} H^{*}=\Omega^{\star}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right) \tag{B.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting (B.6) into (B.5), we have (b).
Result (c) is a direct result of (a) and (b). This completes the proof.
Proposition B. 1 Under Assumption A-D, together with the identification condition IR1, we have
(a) $\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}=V \lambda_{i}+\Delta_{\phi \phi}^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$
(b) $\hat{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}=W \lambda_{i}+\Delta_{\eta \eta}^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \eta_{t} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$
(c) $\hat{f}_{t}-f_{t}=\left(\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i} \lambda_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{T} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i} e_{i t}\right)-V^{\prime} f_{t}-W^{\prime} g_{t}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$
where $\operatorname{vec}(V)=\mathbb{B}_{Q}^{-1} \mathbb{P}_{1} D_{r_{1}}^{+} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left[\varepsilon_{t} \otimes \varepsilon_{t}-\operatorname{vec}\left(I_{r_{1}}\right)\right] ; \phi_{t}=f_{t}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} g_{t} ; \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}=E\left(\phi_{t} \phi_{t}^{\prime}\right)$; $W=\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \boldsymbol{v}_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime} ; \eta_{t}=g_{t}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{-1} f_{t} ; \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}=E\left(\eta_{t} \eta_{t}^{\prime}\right)$.

Proof of Proposition B.1. Consider the VAR expression under AU2:

$$
h_{t}^{\star}=\Phi_{1}^{\star} h_{t-1}^{\star}+\Phi_{2}^{\star} h_{t-2}^{\star}+\cdots+\Phi_{K}^{\star} h_{t-K}^{\star}+u_{t}^{\star} .
$$

Pre-multiplying $R^{\prime-1}$ gives

$$
h_{t}=\left(R^{\prime-1} \Phi_{1}^{\star} R^{\prime}\right) h_{t-1}+\cdots+\left(R^{\prime-1} \Phi_{K}^{\star} R^{\prime}\right) h_{t-K}+R^{\prime-1} u_{t}^{\star} .
$$

So we have $\Phi_{i}=R^{\prime-1} \Phi_{i}^{\star} R^{\prime}$ for $i=1,2, \ldots, K$ and $u_{t}=R^{\prime-1} u_{t}^{\star}$. Then we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\varepsilon_{t} & =R_{11}^{\prime-1} \varepsilon_{t}^{\star}-R_{11}^{\prime-1} R_{21}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star},  \tag{B.7}\\
\boldsymbol{v}_{t} & =\boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star} .
\end{align*}
$$

Post-multiplying $\boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\prime}$ on both sides and taking the expectation, by $E\left(\varepsilon_{t} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\prime}\right)=0$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{21}=\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}^{\star} \tag{B.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting the proceeding result into (B.7), by $E\left(\varepsilon_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}\right)=I_{r_{1}}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star}=\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}^{\star}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}^{\star}=R_{11}^{\prime} R_{11} . \tag{B.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}^{\star}=E\left(\varepsilon_{t}^{\star} \varepsilon_{t}^{\star \prime}\right), \Omega_{v}^{\star} v=E\left(\boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)$ and $\Omega_{\varepsilon v}^{\star}=E\left(\varepsilon_{t}^{\star} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)$. In addition, the identification condition also requires that

$$
Q=\frac{1}{N} \Lambda^{\prime} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda=R_{11}\left(\frac{1}{N} \Lambda^{\star \prime} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda^{\star}\right) R_{11}^{\prime} .
$$

This is equivalent to

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q^{\star}=\frac{1}{N} \Lambda^{\star \prime} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda^{\star}=R_{11}^{-1} Q R_{11}^{\prime-1} \tag{B.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

However, our estimation procedure implies that the estimators of $R_{11}, R_{21}$, denoted by $\hat{R}_{11}, \hat{R}_{21}$, satisfy

$$
\begin{gather*}
\hat{R}_{21}=\tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v}}^{-1} \tilde{\Omega}_{v \varepsilon}  \tag{B.11}\\
\hat{R}_{11}^{\prime} \hat{R}_{11}=\tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v}=\tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}-\tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon v} \tilde{\Omega}_{v v}^{-1} \tilde{\Omega}_{v \varepsilon}  \tag{B.12}\\
\hat{R}_{11}\left(\frac{1}{N} \tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\right) \hat{R}_{11}^{\prime}=\operatorname{diag} \tag{B.13}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $\tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}, \tilde{\Omega}_{v v}, \tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon v}$ are submatrices of $\tilde{\Omega}$, which is defined as

$$
\tilde{\Omega}=\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{u}_{t} \tilde{u}_{t}^{\prime}
$$

with $\tilde{u}_{t}$ being the residuals of the regression

$$
\tilde{h}_{t}=\Phi_{1} \tilde{h}_{t-1}+\Phi_{2} \tilde{h}_{t-2}+\cdots+\Phi_{K} \tilde{h}_{t-K}+\text { error }
$$

Let $\tilde{\psi}_{t}=\left(\tilde{h}_{t-1}^{\prime}, \tilde{h}_{t-2}^{\prime} \ldots, \tilde{h}_{t-K}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}$. Thus

$$
\tilde{u}_{t}=\tilde{h}_{t}-\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{h}_{t} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{\psi}_{t} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1} \tilde{\psi}_{t}
$$

So we have

$$
\tilde{\Omega}=\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{h}_{t} \tilde{h}_{t}^{\prime}-\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{h}_{t} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{\psi}_{t} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{\psi}_{t} \tilde{h}_{t}^{\prime}\right)
$$

The above result can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{align*}
\tilde{\Omega}-\Omega^{\star}= & \left\{\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{h}_{t} \tilde{h}_{t}^{\prime}-\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{h}_{t} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{\psi}_{t} \tilde{\psi}_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \tilde{\psi}_{t} \tilde{h}_{t}^{\prime}\right)\right. \\
& \left.-\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} h_{t}^{\star} h_{t}^{\star \prime}+\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} h_{t}^{\star} \psi_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{\star} \psi_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{\star} h_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)\right\}  \tag{B.14}\\
& +\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(u_{t}^{\star} u_{t}^{\star \prime}-\Omega^{\star}\right)-\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{\star} \psi_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{\star} \psi_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{\star} u_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

where $\psi_{t}^{\star}=\left(h_{t-1}^{\star \prime}, h_{t-2}^{\star \prime}, \ldots, h_{t-K}^{\star \prime}\right)^{\prime}$. The expression in bracket is given in Lemma B.2(c). Given this result, together with

$$
\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{\star} \psi_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{\star} \psi_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{\star} u_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)=O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right),
$$

we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\Omega}-\Omega^{\star}=-B^{\star \prime} \Omega^{\star}-\Omega^{\star} B^{\star}+\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(u_{t}^{\star} u_{t}^{\star \prime}-\Omega^{\star}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) . \tag{B.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

The above result implies

$$
\begin{align*}
\tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}^{\star}= & -V^{\star \prime} \Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}^{\star}-W^{\star \prime} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}^{\star}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}^{\star} V^{\star}-\Omega_{\varepsilon v}^{\star} W^{\star}+\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\varepsilon_{t}^{\star} \varepsilon_{t}^{\star \prime}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}^{\star}\right) \\
& +O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) ;  \tag{B.16}\\
\tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \boldsymbol{v}}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star}= & -V^{\star \prime} \Omega_{\varepsilon \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star}-W^{\star \prime} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} v}^{\star}+\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\varepsilon_{t}^{\star} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star \prime}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) ;  \tag{B.17}\\
\tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}-\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star}= & \frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star \prime}-\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) . \tag{B.18}
\end{align*}
$$

By (B.15), we have $\tilde{\Omega}-\Omega^{\star} \xrightarrow{p} 0$. Then it follows $\tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v}^{\star} \xrightarrow{p} 0$, where $\tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v}$ and $\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot v}^{\star}$ are defined in (B.9) and (B.12). Thus

$$
\hat{R}_{11}^{\prime} \hat{R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1} R_{11}^{\prime-1} \xrightarrow{p} I_{r_{1}},
$$

which, by the fact that $A B=I$ then $B A=I$, leads to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\hat{R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}\right)^{\prime}\left(\hat{R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}\right) \xrightarrow{p} I_{r_{1}} \tag{B.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Furthermore, by (B.13), we have

$$
\left(\hat{R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}\right)\left[R_{11}\left(\frac{1}{N} \tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}\right) R_{11}^{\prime}\right]\left(\hat{R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}\right)^{\prime}=\operatorname{diag}
$$

By $\frac{1}{N} \tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}-\frac{1}{N} \Lambda^{\star} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda^{\star}=o_{p}(1)$ and $R_{11} \frac{1}{N} \Lambda^{\star} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda^{\star} R_{11}^{\prime}=\frac{1}{N} \Lambda^{\prime} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda=Q$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\hat{R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}\right) Q\left(\hat{R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}\right)^{\prime}=\operatorname{diag} \tag{B.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Notice $Q$ is a diagonal matrix by identification. Applying Lemma A. 2 to (B.19) and (B.20), we have $\hat{R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}$ converges to a diagonal matrix whose diagonal elements are either 1 or -1 . However, the possibility of -1 is precluded by our sign restrictions. Given this result, we have $\hat{R}_{11}-R_{11} \xrightarrow{p} 0$. Henceforth, we use $\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}$ to denote $\hat{R}_{11}-R_{11}$. Apparently $\widehat{\Delta R}_{11} \xrightarrow{p} 0$. By (B.9) and (B.12), we have

$$
\hat{R}_{11}^{\prime} \hat{R}_{11}-R_{11}^{\prime} R_{11}=\tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}^{\star}-\left(\tilde{\Omega}_{\varepsilon v} \tilde{\Omega}_{v \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1} \tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}-\Omega_{\varepsilon v}^{\star} \Omega_{v \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}^{\star}\right)
$$

Substituting (B.16)-(B.18) into the above equation, together with Lemma B.1, we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\prime} R_{11}+R_{11}^{\prime} \widehat{\Delta R}_{11}+\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\prime} \widehat{\Delta R}_{11}=-V^{\star \prime} \Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star} V^{\star} \\
+\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left[\left(\varepsilon_{t}^{\star}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star}\right)\left(\varepsilon_{t}^{\star}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star}\right)^{\prime}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon \cdot \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star}\right]+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) .
\end{gathered}
$$

However, by (B.7) and (B.8), we have $R_{11}^{\prime} \varepsilon_{t}=\varepsilon_{t}^{\star}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star} \Omega_{v v}^{\star-1} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star}$. Given this result, together with (B.9), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\prime} R_{11}+R_{11}^{\prime} \widehat{\Delta R}_{11}+\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\prime} \widehat{\Delta R}_{11} & =-V^{\star \prime} R_{11}^{\prime} R_{11}-R_{11}^{\prime} R_{11} V^{\star} \\
& +R_{11}^{\prime}\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \varepsilon_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}-I_{r_{1}}\right] R_{11}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) . \tag{B.21}
\end{align*}
$$

Pre-multiplying $R_{11}^{\prime-1}$ and post-multiplying $R_{11}^{-1}$ on both sides, and neglecting the smaller order term $R_{11}^{\prime-1} \widehat{\Delta R_{11}^{\prime}} \widehat{\Delta R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(\widehat{\Delta R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}+R_{11} V^{\star} R_{11}^{-1}\right) & +\left(\widehat{\Delta R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}+R_{11} V^{\star} R_{11}^{-1}\right)^{\prime} \\
& =\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\varepsilon_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}-I_{r_{1}}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) . \tag{B.22}
\end{align*}
$$

Now consider

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{1}{N} \tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}-\frac{1}{N} \Lambda^{\star \prime} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda^{\star} & =\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\tilde{\sigma}_{i}^{2}}\left(\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{\star}\right) \tilde{\lambda}_{i}^{\prime}+\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\tilde{\sigma}_{i}^{2}} \tilde{\lambda}_{i}\left(\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{\star}\right)^{\prime} \\
& -\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\tilde{\sigma}_{i}^{2}}\left(\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{\star}\right)\left(\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{\star}\right)^{\prime}+\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \lambda_{i}^{\star} \lambda_{i}^{\star \prime}\left(\frac{1}{\tilde{\sigma}_{i}^{2}}-\frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

The last term is $O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$ which is shown in Bai and Li (2012). The third term is $O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$. The first two terms are $V^{\star} Q^{\star}+Q^{\star} V^{\star \prime}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$ by Proposition A.3. Then it follows

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{N} \tilde{\Lambda}^{\prime} \tilde{\Sigma}_{e e}^{-1} \tilde{\Lambda}-\frac{1}{N} \Lambda^{\star \prime} \Sigma_{e e}^{-1} \Lambda^{\star}=V^{\star} Q^{\star}+Q^{\star} V^{\star \prime}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \tag{B.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Given the above results, (B.13) is equivalent to

$$
\operatorname{Ndg}\left\{\hat{R}_{11}\left(Q^{\star}+V^{\star} Q^{\star}+Q^{\star} V^{\star \prime}\right) \hat{R}_{11}^{\prime}\right\}=O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

Substituting (B.10) into the proceeding equation, we have
$\operatorname{Ndg}\left\{\hat{R}_{11}\left(R_{11}^{-1} Q R_{11}^{\prime-1}+V^{\star} R_{11}^{-1} Q R_{11}^{\prime-1}+R_{11}^{-1} Q R_{11}^{\prime-1} V^{\star \prime}\right) \hat{R}_{11}^{\prime}\right\}=O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$.
Replace $\hat{R}_{11}=\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}+R_{11}$, the left hand side is (neglecting Ndg)

$$
\begin{aligned}
& Q+\widehat{\Delta R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1} Q+Q\left(\widehat{\Delta R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}\right)^{\prime}+\widehat{\Delta R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1} Q\left(\widehat{\Delta R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}\right)^{\prime} Q \\
& +R_{11} V^{\star} R_{11}^{-1} Q+\widehat{\Delta R}_{11} V^{\star} R_{11}^{-1} Q+\hat{R}_{11} V^{\star} R_{11}^{-1} Q\left(\widehat{\Delta R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}\right)^{\prime} \\
& +Q R_{11}^{-1} V^{\star \prime} R_{11}^{\prime}+Q R_{11}^{\prime-1} V^{\star \prime} \widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\prime}+\left(\widehat{\Delta R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}\right) Q R_{11}^{\prime-1} V^{\star \prime} \hat{R}_{11}^{\prime}
\end{aligned}
$$

By neglecting the terms of smaller magnitude and noticing that $\operatorname{Ndg}(Q)=0$, we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
\operatorname{Ndg}\left\{\left(\widehat{\Delta R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}+R_{11} V^{\star} R_{11}^{-1}\right) Q\right.  \tag{B.24}\\
\left.+Q\left(\widehat{\Delta R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}+R_{11} V^{\star} R_{11}^{-1}\right)^{\prime}\right\}=O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) .
\end{gather*}
$$

Let $\mathbb{V}=\widehat{\Delta R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}+R_{11} V^{\star} R_{11}^{-1}$. Taking the half-vectorization operation vech $(\cdot)$ which stacks the elements on and below the diagonal of the argument into a vector on both sides of (B.22), we get

$$
\operatorname{vech}\left(\mathbb{V}+\mathbb{V}^{\prime}\right)=\operatorname{vech}\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\varepsilon_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}-I_{r_{1}}\right)\right]+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

By the definitions of duplication matrix $D_{r_{1}}$ and its Moore-Penrose inverse $D_{r_{1}}^{+}$, and symmetrizer matrix $S_{r_{1}}=\left(I_{r_{1}^{2}}+K_{r_{1}}\right) / 2$, the left hand side of the above equation can be written as

$$
\operatorname{vech}\left(\mathbb{V}+\mathbb{V}^{\prime}\right)=D_{r_{1}}^{+} \operatorname{vec}\left(\mathbb{V}+\mathbb{V}^{\prime}\right)=2 D_{r_{1}}^{+} S_{r_{1}} \operatorname{vec}(\mathbb{V})=2 D_{r_{1}}^{+} \operatorname{vec}(\mathbb{V})
$$

where the last equation is due to $D_{r_{1}}^{+} S_{r_{1}}=D_{r_{1}}^{+}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 D_{r_{1}}^{+} \operatorname{vec}(\mathbb{V})=D_{r_{1}}^{+} \operatorname{vec}\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\varepsilon_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}-I_{r_{1}}\right)\right]+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \tag{B.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\operatorname{veck}(M)$ be the operation which stacks the elements below the diagonal into a vector. Let $\mathbb{D}_{1}$ be the matrix such that $\operatorname{veck}(M)=\mathbb{D}_{1} \operatorname{vec}(M)$ for any symmetric matrix $M$. By (B.24), we have

$$
\operatorname{veck}\left(\mathbb{V} Q+Q \mathbb{V}^{\prime}\right)=O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

implying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{D}_{1}\left[Q \otimes I_{r_{1}}+\left(I_{r_{1}} \otimes Q\right) K_{r_{1}}\right] \operatorname{vec}(\mathbb{V})=O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \tag{B.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

The preceding two equations imply

$$
\left[\begin{array}{c}
2 D_{r_{1}}^{+} \\
\mathbb{D}_{1}\left[Q \otimes I_{r_{1}}+\left(I_{r_{1}} \otimes Q\right) K_{r_{1}}\right]
\end{array}\right] \operatorname{vec}(\mathbb{V})=\left[\begin{array}{c}
D_{r_{1}}^{+} \operatorname{vec}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\varepsilon_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}-I_{r_{1}}\right)\right) \\
0
\end{array}\right]+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

Let $\mathbb{B}_{Q}$ be the matrix before $\operatorname{vec}(\mathbb{V})$ and $\mathbb{P}_{1}=\left[I_{p}, 0_{p \times q}\right]^{\prime}$, then the above result is equivalent to

$$
\operatorname{vec}(\mathbb{V})=\mathbb{B}_{Q}^{-1} \mathbb{P}_{1} D_{r_{1}}^{+} \operatorname{vec}\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\varepsilon_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}-I_{r_{1}}\right)\right]+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

Define $V$ by

$$
\operatorname{vec}(V)=\mathbb{B}_{Q}^{-1} \mathbb{P}_{1} D_{r_{1}}^{+} \operatorname{vec}\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\varepsilon_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}-I_{r_{1}}\right)\right]
$$

Then by the definition of $\mathbb{V}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\Delta R}_{11} R_{11}^{-1}+R_{11} V^{\star} R_{11}^{-1}=V++O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \tag{B.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Post-multiplying $R_{11}$ on both sides of (B.27), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}=-R_{11} V^{\star}+V R_{11}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)=O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right) \tag{B.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

since $V^{\star}=O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)$ and $V=O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)$.
Now consider $\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}$. By $\hat{\lambda}_{i}=\hat{R}_{11} \tilde{\lambda}_{i}$ and $\lambda_{i}=R_{11} \lambda_{i}^{\star}$, we have

$$
\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}=\hat{R}_{11} \tilde{\lambda}_{i}-R_{11} \lambda_{i}^{\star}=\widehat{\Delta R}_{11} \lambda_{i}^{\star}+R_{11}\left(\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{\star}\right)+\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}\left(\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{\star}\right) .
$$

The last term of right hand side is $O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-2}\right)$ by $\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{\star}=O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)$ and $\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}=O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)$. By (B.28) and (A.24), together with $\lambda_{i}=R_{11} \lambda_{i}^{\star}$, we have

$$
\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}=V \lambda_{i}+R_{11}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{\star} f_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{\star} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) .
$$

Using (B.4), the above expression can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i} & =V \lambda_{i}+\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t} \phi_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \\
& =\left(\lambda_{i}^{\prime} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right) \operatorname{vec}(V)+\Delta_{\phi \phi}^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

To derive the remaining asymptotic results, we first consider $\widehat{\Delta R}_{21}=\hat{R}_{21}-R_{21}$. Notice

$$
\begin{gathered}
\hat{R}_{21}-R_{21}=\tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1} \tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}-\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}^{\star}=-\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1}\left(\tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}-\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star}\right) \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}^{\star}+\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1}\left(\tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}-\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}^{\star}\right) \\
-\left(\tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1}-\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1}\right)\left(\tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}-\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} v}^{\star}\right) \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}^{\star}+\left(\tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1}-\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1}\right)\left(\tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}-\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}^{\star}\right) .
\end{gathered}
$$

The last two terms of the right hand side are $O_{p}\left(N^{-2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$. Substituting (B.17) and (B.18) into the above result, we have

$$
\widehat{\Delta R}_{21}=\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1} \frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star}\left(\varepsilon_{t}^{\star}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \boldsymbol{\varepsilon}}^{\star} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star}\right)^{\prime}-W^{\star}-\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}^{\star} V^{\star}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

However, by (B.7) and (B.8), we have $R_{11}^{\prime} \varepsilon_{t}=\varepsilon_{t}^{\star}-\Omega_{\varepsilon}^{\star} \Omega_{\hat{v} v}^{\star-1} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star}$ and $\boldsymbol{v}_{t}=\boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star}$. Given these results, we have

$$
\widehat{\Delta R}_{21}=\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1}\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \boldsymbol{v}_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}\right] R_{11}-W^{\star}-\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}^{\star} V^{\star}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

Notice that $R_{21}=\Omega_{\hat{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star-1} \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \varepsilon}^{\star}$ by (B.8) and $\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \boldsymbol{v}_{t} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\prime}=E\left(\boldsymbol{v}_{t} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\prime}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)=\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v}}+$ $O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)=\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\star}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)$, where the last equality is due to $\boldsymbol{v}_{t}=\boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star}$ by (B.7). Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\Delta R}_{21}=W R_{11}-W^{\star}-R_{21} V^{\star}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \tag{B.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $W=\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \boldsymbol{v}_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}\right)$. Notice $\hat{\gamma}_{i}=\tilde{\gamma}_{i}+\hat{R}_{21} \tilde{\lambda}_{i}$ and $\gamma_{i}=\gamma_{i}^{\star}+R_{21} \lambda_{i}^{\star}$. Then $\hat{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}=\left(\tilde{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}^{\star}\right)+\left(\hat{R}_{21} \tilde{\lambda}_{i}-R_{21} \lambda_{i}^{\star}\right)=\left(\tilde{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}^{\star}\right)+\widehat{\Delta R}_{21} \lambda_{i}^{\star}+R_{21}\left(\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{\star}\right)+\widehat{\Delta R} 21\left(\tilde{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}^{\star}\right)$.

The last term of the right hand side of the above equation is $O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-2}\right)$. Substituting (A.25), (A.24) and (B.29) into the above result, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\hat{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}= & {\left[\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right]^{-1}\left[\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} e_{i t}\right]+W \lambda_{i}+R_{21}\left[\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{\star} f_{t}^{\star \prime}\right]^{-1}\left[\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{\star} e_{i t}\right] } \\
& +O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \tag{B.30}
\end{align*}
$$

by $\lambda_{i}=R_{11} \lambda_{i}^{\star}$. Consider the third expression, which, by (B.4), is equal to

$$
R_{21} R_{11}^{-1} R_{11}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{\star} f_{t}^{\star \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} f_{t}^{\star} e_{i t}\right)=R_{21} R_{11}^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t} \phi_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t} e_{i t}\right) .
$$

Consider the last equation of (B.2). Post-multiplying $g_{t}^{\prime}$ on both sides and taking expectation, by $E\left(f_{t}^{\star} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)=0$, we have

$$
R_{21} R_{11}^{-1}=-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \Delta_{g f} .
$$

The preceding two results imply that the third expression of (B.30) is equal to

$$
-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1}\left[\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t} e_{i t}\right]+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) .
$$

Let $\Xi_{t}=\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1} \phi_{t}$. Given the above result, the asymptotic representation of $\hat{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}$ can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}=\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1}\left[\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(g_{t}-\Xi_{t}\right) e_{i t}\right]+W \lambda_{i}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \tag{B.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

The above asymptotic representation has an alternative expression. First, we define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\eta_{t}=g_{t}-E\left(g_{t} f_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left[E\left(f_{t} f_{t}^{\prime}\right)\right]^{-1} f_{t}=g_{t}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{-1} f_{t} . \tag{B.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies that

$$
\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}=\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g}
$$

By the Woodbury formula, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1}=\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f}\left(\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f}\right)^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \tag{B.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

With (B.33) and the relation that $g_{t}-\Xi_{t}=\eta_{t}+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{-1} f_{t}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1} \phi_{t}$, we can rewrite the first term of the right hand side of (B.31) as

$$
\begin{gathered}
\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1}\left[\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(g_{t}-\Xi_{t}\right) e_{i t}\right]=\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \eta_{t} e_{i t}+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{-1} f_{t}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1} \phi_{t}\right) e_{i t} \\
-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f}\left(\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f}\right)^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \eta_{t} e_{i t} \\
-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f}\left(\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f}\right)^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{-1} f_{t}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1} \phi_{t}\right) e_{i t}
\end{gathered}
$$

Consider the term $\left(\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{-1} f_{t}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1} \phi_{t}\right)$. From the definition of $\phi_{t}=f_{t}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} g_{t}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}=\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} \tag{B.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

which can be used to derive

$$
\phi_{t}=f_{t}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1}\left(\eta_{t}+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{-1} f_{t}\right)=\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{-1} f_{t}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \eta_{t}
$$

Then

$$
\left(\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{-1} f_{t}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1} \phi_{t}\right)=\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \eta_{t}
$$

With the above equation, the first term of the right hand side of (B.31) can be further rewritten as

$$
\begin{gather*}
\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1}\left[\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(g_{t}-\Xi_{t}\right) e_{i t}\right]=\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \eta_{t} e_{i t}+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \eta_{t} e_{i t}  \tag{B.35}\\
-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f}\left(\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f}\right)^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \eta_{t} e_{i t} \\
-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f}\left(\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f}\right)^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \eta_{t} e_{i t}
\end{gather*}
$$

From the two basic facts that

$$
\Delta_{\phi \phi}^{-1}=\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{-1}+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{-1},
$$

and

$$
\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1}=\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} .
$$

we can rewrite the 2nd, 3rd and 4th terms on the right hand side of (B.35) as

$$
\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f}\left(\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{-1}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f f}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1}\right) \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \eta_{t} e_{i t}
$$

which equals zero by (B.34). So we can alternatively write the asymptotic representation of $\hat{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}$ as

$$
\hat{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}=\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\eta \eta}^{-1}\left[\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \eta_{t} e_{i t}\right]+W \lambda_{i}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) .
$$

We proceed to consider $\hat{f}_{t}-f_{t}$. Notice $\hat{f_{t}}=\hat{R}_{11}^{\prime-1} \tilde{f}_{t}-\hat{R}_{11}^{\prime-1} \hat{R}_{21}^{\prime} g_{t}$ and $f_{t}=R_{11}^{\prime-1} f_{t}^{\star}-$ $R_{11}^{\prime-1} R_{21}^{\prime} g_{t}$. Then

$$
\begin{gathered}
\hat{f}_{t}-f_{t}=\hat{R}_{11}^{\prime-1} \tilde{f}_{t}-\hat{R}_{11}^{\prime-1} \hat{R}_{21}^{\prime} g_{t}-R_{11}^{\prime-1} f_{t}^{\star}-R_{11}^{\prime-1} R_{21}^{\prime} g_{t} \\
=-R_{11}^{\prime-1}\left(\hat{R}_{11}^{\prime}-R_{11}^{\prime}\right) R_{11}^{\prime-1} f_{t}^{\star}+R_{11}^{\prime-1}\left(\tilde{f}_{t}-f_{t}^{\star}\right)-R_{11}^{\prime 1}\left(\hat{R}_{21}^{\prime}-R_{21}^{\prime}\right) g_{t}+R_{11}^{\prime-1}\left(\hat{R}_{11}^{\prime}-R_{11}^{\prime}\right) R_{11}^{\prime-1} R_{21}^{\prime} g_{t} \\
-\left(\hat{R}_{11}^{\prime-1}-R_{11}^{\prime-1}\right)\left(\hat{R}_{11}^{\prime}-R_{11}^{\prime}\right) R_{11}^{\prime-1} f_{t}^{\star}+\left(\hat{R}_{11}^{\prime-1}-R_{11}^{\prime-1}\right)\left(\tilde{f}_{t}-f_{t}^{\star}\right)-\left(\hat{R}_{11}^{\prime-1}-R_{11}^{\prime-1}\right)\left(\hat{R}_{21}-R_{21}\right) g_{t} \\
+\left(\hat{R}_{11}^{\prime-1}-R_{11}^{\prime-1}\right)\left(\hat{R}_{11}^{\prime}-R_{11}^{\prime}\right) R_{11}^{\prime-1} R_{21}^{\prime} g_{t}
\end{gathered}
$$

The last four terms of the above expression are $O_{p}\left(N^{-2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$. Given this result, by (B.28), (B.29) and Proposition A.3, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{f_{t}-f_{t}} & =-V^{\prime}\left(R_{11}^{\prime-1} f_{t}^{\star}-R_{11}^{\prime-1} R_{21}^{\prime} g_{t}\right)-W^{\prime} g_{t} \\
& +\left[\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i} \lambda_{i}^{\prime}\right]^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{T} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

By $f_{t}=R_{11}^{\prime-1} f_{t}^{\star}-R_{11}^{\prime-1} R_{21}^{\prime} g_{t}$, we have

$$
\hat{f_{t}}-f_{t}=\left(\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i} \lambda_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{T} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i} e_{i t}\right)-V^{\prime} f_{t}-W^{\prime} g_{t}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) .
$$

This completes the proof.
Proposition B. 2 Under Assumptions A-D, together with the identification condition IR1, we have

$$
\hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}=\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t} \psi_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t} \psi_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(i_{k} \otimes I_{r}\right)-B^{\prime} \Phi_{k}+\Phi_{k} B^{\prime}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

Proof of Proposition B.2. Consider $\hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}$. Notice $\hat{\Phi}_{k}=R^{\prime-1} \hat{\Phi}_{k} \hat{R}^{\prime}$ and $\Phi_{k}=$ $R^{\prime-1} \Phi_{k}^{\star} R^{\prime}$. Thus
$\hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}=R^{\prime-1} \hat{\Phi}_{k} \hat{R}^{\prime}-R^{\prime-1} \Phi_{k}^{\star} R^{\prime}=R^{\prime-1} \Phi_{k}^{\star} \widehat{\Delta R}^{\prime}-R^{\prime-1} \widehat{\Delta R}^{\prime} R^{\prime-1} \Phi_{k}^{\star} R^{\prime}+R^{\prime-1}\left(\hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}^{\star}\right) R^{\prime}+V$
where
$V=\left(R^{\prime-1}-R^{\prime-1}\right) \hat{\Phi}_{k} \widehat{\Delta R}^{\prime}+\left(\hat{R}^{\prime-1}-R^{\prime-1}\right)\left(\hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}^{\star}\right) R^{\prime}-\left(\hat{R}^{\prime-1}-R^{\prime-1}\right) \widehat{\Delta R}^{\prime} R^{\prime-1}+R^{\prime-1}\left(\hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}^{\star}\right) \widehat{\Delta R}^{\prime}$
However, notice

$$
\begin{align*}
\widehat{\Delta R} & =\hat{R}-R=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
\widehat{\Delta R}_{11} & 0 \\
\widehat{\Delta R}_{21} & 0
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
-R_{11} V^{\star}+V R_{11} & 0 \\
W R_{11}-W^{\star}-R_{21} V^{\star} & 0
\end{array}\right]+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \\
& =B R-R B^{\star}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \tag{B.36}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
B=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
V & 0 \\
W & 0
\end{array}\right], \quad B^{\star}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
V^{\star} & 0 \\
W^{\star} & 0
\end{array}\right]
$$

and $W=\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} \boldsymbol{v}_{t} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} \boldsymbol{v}_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}\right)$. Then $\widehat{\Delta R}$ is $O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)$ since both $B$ and $B^{\star}$ are $O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)$. This result together with $\hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}^{\star}=O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)$ implies $V=$ $O_{p}\left(N^{-2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$. Given this result, together with $\Phi_{k}=R^{-1} \Phi_{k}^{\star} R^{\prime}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}=\Phi_{k} R^{\prime-1} \widehat{\Delta R}^{\prime}-R^{\prime-1} \widehat{\Delta R}^{\prime} \Phi_{k}+R^{\prime-1}\left(\hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}^{\star}\right) R^{\prime}+O_{p}\left(N^{-2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \tag{B.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting (B.36) into the above equation, together with $u_{t}=R^{\prime-1} u_{t}^{\star}, h_{t}=R^{\prime-1} h_{t}^{\star}$ and Proposition A.4, we have

$$
\hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}=\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t} \psi_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t} \psi_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(i_{k} \otimes I_{r}\right)-B^{\prime} \Phi_{k}+\Phi_{k} B^{\prime}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

This completes the proof.

## References

Anderson, T. W. (2003) An Introduction to Multivariate Statistical Analysis, John Wily \& Sons.

Anderson, T. W. and H. Rubin (1956) Statistical inference in factor analysis, In Proceedings of the third Berkeley Symposium on mathematical statistics and probability: contributions to the theory of statistics, University of California Press.

Bai, J. (2003) Inferential theory for factor models of large dimensions. Econometrica, 71(1), 135-171.

Bai, J. and K. Li (2012a) Statistical analysis of factor models of high dimension, The Annals of Statistics, 40:1, 436-465.

Bai, J. and K. Li (2012b) Maximum likelihood estimation and inference for approximate factor models of high dimension, manuscript.

Bai, J. and S. Ng (2002) Determining the number of factors in approximate factor models, Econometrica, 70:1, 191-221.

Bai, J. and S. Ng (2013) Principal components estimation and identification of static factors, Journal of Econometrics, 176, 18-29.

Bernanke, B. S. and J. Boivin (2003) Monetary policy in a data-rich environment, Journal of Monetary Economics, 50:3, 525-546.

Bernanke, B. S., J. Boivin, and P. Eliasz (2005) Measuring the effects of monetary policy: a factor-augmented vector autoregressive (FAVAR) approach, The Quarterly Journal of Economics, 120:1 387-422

Bianchi, F., H., Mumtaz, and P. Surico (2009) The great moderation of the term structure of U.K. interest rates, Jounral of Monetary Economics, 56, 856-871.

Boivin, J., M.P. Giannoni, and I. Mihov (2009) Sticky prices and monetary policy: evidence from disaggregated US data, American Economic Review, 99:1, 350-384.

Chamberlain, G. and M. Rothschild (1983) Arbitrage, factor structure, and mean-variance analysis on large asset markets, Econometrica, 51:5, 1281-1304.

Christiano, L. J., M. Eichenbaum and C.L. Evans (1999) Monetary policy shocks: What have we learned and to what end? J. B. Taylor and M. Woodford (ed.), Handbook of Macroeconomics, 1:1, 65-148.

Chen, L., J. J. Dolado, and J. Gonzalo (2011): Detecting Big Structural Breaks in Large Factor Models, Manuscript, Universidad Carlos III de Madrid.

Cheng, X, Z. Liao, F. Schorfheide (2013). Shrinkage estimation of high-dimensional factor models with structural instabilities, Department of Economics, U. Pennsylvania.

Doan, T., R.B. Litterman, and C.A. Sims (1984) Forecasting and policy analysis using realistic prior distributions, Econometric Reviews, 3:1-100.

Doz, C., D. Giannone, and L. Reichlin (2012) A quasi-maximum likelihood approach for large approximate dynamic factor models, Review of economics and statistics, 94(4), 1014-1024.

Doz, C., D. Giannone, and L. Reichlin (2011), A Two-Step estimator for large approximate dynamic factor models based on Kalman filtering, Journal of Econometrics, 164:1, 188205.

Fan, J. , Liao, Y., and Mincheva, M. (2011) High Dimensional Covariance Matrix Estimation in Approximate Factor Models. The Annals of Statistics, 39, 3320-3356.

Fan, J., Y., Liao and M, Mincheva (2013) Large covariance estimation by thresholding principal orthogonal complements, Journal of the Royal Statistical Society: Series B (Statistical Methodology), 75(4), 603-680.

Forni, M. and L., Gambetti (2010) The dynamic effects of monetary policy: A strctural factor model approach, Jounral of Monetary Economics, 57(2), 203-216.

Forni, M., M. Hallin, M. Lippi and L. Reichlin (2000) The generalized dynamic-factor model: Identification and estimation. Review of Economics and Statistics, 82(4), 540554.

Goncalves, S., and Perron, B. (2014) Bootstrapping factor-augmented regression models, Journal of Econometrics, 182(1), 156-173.

Hamiltion, J. (1994) Time series analysis, Princeton university press Princeton
Han, X. (2014) Tests for overidentifying restrictions in Factor-Augmented VAR models, Journal of Econometrics, Forthcoming.

Han, X., and A. Inoue (2011): Tests for Parameter Instability in Dynamic Factor Models, Manuscript, North Carolina State University.

Lawley D. N. and A. E. Maxwell (1971) Factor Analysis as a Statistical Method, New York: American Elsevier Publishing Company.

Leeper, E. M., C. A. Sims, and T. Zha (1996) What does monetary policy do? Brookings Papers on Economic Activity, 2, 1-63.

Litterman, R. B. (1986) Forecasting with Bayesian vector autoregressions: five years of experience, Journal of Business and Economic Statistics, 4:25-38.

Ludvigson, S. C. and S. Ng (2009) Macro factors in bond risk premia, Review of Financial Studies, 22(12), 5027-5067.

Moench, E. (2008) Forecasting the yield curve in a data-rich environment: A no-arbitrage factor-augmented VAR approach, Journal of Econometrics 146(1), 26-43.

Quah, D. and T. Sargent (1992). A dynamic index model for large cross-section. Federal Reserve Bank of Minneapolis, Discussion Paper 77.

Shintani, M., and Guo, Y. (2011) Finite sample performance of principal components estimators for dynamic factor models: Asymptotic vs. bootstrap approximations, Manuscript, Vanderbilt University

Sims, C. A. (1980) Macroeconomics and Reality, Econometrica, 48:1-48.
Sims, C. A. (1992) Interpreting the macroeconomic time series facts: the effects of monetary policy" European Economic Review, 36, 975-1000.

Sims, C. A. (1993) A nine-variable probabilistic macroeconomic forecasting model, J.H. Stock and M.W. Watson, eds., Business Cycles, Indicators, and Forecasting (University of Chicago Press for the NBER, Chicago), Ch. 7:179-204.

Stock, J. H. and M. W. Watson (2002) Forecasting using principal components from a large number of predictors, Journal of the American Statistical Association, 97, 1167-1179.

Stock, J. H. and M. W. Watson (2005) Implications of Dynamic Factor Models for VAR Analysis, manuscript.

Tsai, H., and R. S., Tsay (2010) Constrained factor models, Jounral of the American Statistical Association, 105, 1593-1605.

Watson, M. W. and R. F., Engle (1983) Alternative algorithms for the estimation of dynamic factor, mimic and varying coefficient regression models, Journal of Econometrics, 23(3), 385-400.

Yamamoto Y. (2011) Bootstrap inference of impulse response functions in factor-augmented vector regression. Manuscript.

## Supplement to "Estimation and inference of FAVAR models"

In this supplement, we provide detailed derivations for the asymptotic results under IRb and IRc. We also provide the derivations for the asymptotic results of the impulse response function.

## Appendix C: The asymptotic results and their proofs under IRb

In this section, we derive the asymptotic results under IRb. The idea of the derivation is to find the rotation matrix and its estimate, which transform the parameters under IRa to those of IRb. For ease of exposition, we adopt the symbols in the previous section to denote the parameters under IRa, e.g., $\Lambda, \Gamma$ and $F$. We use the symbols with diamond to denote the parameters under IRb, e.g., $\Lambda^{\diamond}, \Gamma^{\diamond}$ and $F^{\diamond}$. We also use $R^{\diamond}$ to denote the rotation matrix which transforms the parameters set $\left(\lambda_{i}^{\prime}, \gamma_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{\prime}$ into $\left(\lambda_{i}^{\diamond \prime}, \gamma_{i}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{\prime}$. We point out that $R^{\diamond}$, unlike $R^{\star}$ in appendix A , is nonrandom. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
z_{t} & =\left[\Lambda^{\diamond}, \Gamma^{\diamond}\right]\left[\begin{array}{l}
f_{t}^{\diamond} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]+e_{t} \\
& =[\Lambda, \Gamma]\left[\begin{array}{cc}
R_{11}^{\diamond \prime} & R_{21}^{\diamond \prime} \\
0 & I_{r_{2}}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{cc}
R_{11}^{\diamond \prime-1} & -R_{11}^{\diamond \prime-1} R_{21}^{\diamond 1} \\
0 & I_{r_{2}}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{c}
f_{t} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]+e_{t} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Using the method in deriving (B.7), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond} & =R_{11}^{\diamond \prime-1} \varepsilon_{t}-R_{11}^{\diamond-1} R_{21}^{\diamond \prime} \boldsymbol{v}_{t},  \tag{C.1}\\
\boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\diamond} & =\boldsymbol{v}_{t}
\end{align*}
$$

By $E\left(\varepsilon_{t} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\prime}\right)=E\left(\varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)=0$ and $E\left(\varepsilon_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}\right)=E\left(\varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond} \varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)=I_{r_{1}}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{21}^{\diamond}=0 ; \quad R_{11}^{\diamond \prime} R_{11}^{\diamond}=I_{r_{1}} . \tag{C.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

In addition, the identification conditions require

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Lambda_{1} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}=\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond}, \tag{C.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\Lambda_{1}, \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond}$ are the upper $r_{1} \times r_{1}$ submatrices of $\Lambda, \Lambda^{\diamond}$, respectively. Accordingly, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \hat{R}_{21}^{\diamond}=0, \quad \hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond \prime} \hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond}=I_{r_{1}},  \tag{C.4}\\
& \hat{\Lambda}_{1} \hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond \prime}=\hat{\Lambda}_{1}^{\circ} \text {. } \tag{C.5}
\end{align*}
$$

By (C.2) and (C.4), we have $\hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond} \hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime} R_{11}^{\diamond}=I_{r_{1}}$. This implies

$$
\left(R_{11}^{\diamond} \hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right)\left(R_{11}^{\diamond} \hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{\prime}=I_{r_{1}} .
$$

Furthermore, notice that both $\hat{\Lambda}_{1}^{\diamond}$ and $\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond}$ are lower triangular matrices, then $\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1} \hat{\Lambda}_{1}^{\diamond}$ is a lower triangular matrix. By (C.3) and (C.5), we have $\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1} \hat{\Lambda}_{1}^{\diamond}=R_{11}^{\diamond} \Lambda_{1}^{-1} \hat{\Lambda}_{1} \hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond \prime}$. However,
we have already proved that $\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1} \xrightarrow{p} 0$. Given this result, we have $R_{11}^{\diamond} \hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond} \xrightarrow{p} \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1} \hat{\Lambda}_{1}^{\diamond}$, a lower triangular matrix. By $\left(R_{11}^{\diamond} \hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right)\left(R_{11}^{\diamond} \hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{\prime}=I_{r}$, we have $R_{11}^{\diamond} \hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond \prime}$ converges in probability to a diagonal matrix whose diagonal elements are either 1 or -1 . However, our sign restrictions rule out the possibility of -1 . Then it follows $\hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond} \xrightarrow{p} R_{11}^{\diamond}$.

Let $\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond}=\hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond}-R_{11}^{\diamond}$. By $\hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond} \hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond}=R_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond}=I_{r_{1}}$, we have

$$
\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\Delta \prime} R_{11}^{\diamond}+R_{11}^{\diamond} \widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond}+\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\Delta \prime} \widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond}=0
$$

Pre-multiplying $R_{11}^{\diamond}$ and post-multiplying $R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}$ on both sides gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right)+\left(\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{\prime}+\left(\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{\prime}\left(\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right)=0 \tag{C.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Also notice that

$$
\hat{\Lambda}_{1}^{\diamond \prime}-\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond \prime}=\hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond} \hat{\Lambda}_{1}^{\prime}-R_{11}^{\diamond} \Lambda_{1}^{\prime}=\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond} \Lambda_{1}^{\prime}+R_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime}+\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime}
$$

However, term $\widehat{\Delta R}{ }_{11}^{\diamond} \Lambda_{1}^{\prime}=\left(\widehat{\Delta R}{ }_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right)\left(R_{11}^{\diamond} \Lambda_{1}^{\prime}\right)=\left(\widehat{\Delta R}{ }_{11} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right) \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond \prime}$. Given this result, we have

$$
\hat{\Lambda}_{1}^{\diamond \prime}-\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond \prime}=\left(\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right) \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond \prime}+R_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime}+\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime}
$$

Post-multiplying $\Lambda_{1}^{\Delta-1}$ on both sides, we have

$$
\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}^{\Delta \prime}-\Lambda_{1}^{\Delta \prime}\right) \Lambda_{1}^{\Delta \prime-1}=\left(\widehat{\Delta R} \stackrel{\Delta}{11} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right)+R_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\Delta \prime-1}+\widehat{\Delta R} \widehat{11}_{\diamond}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\Delta \prime-1}
$$

Matrix $\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}^{\diamond \prime}-\Lambda_{1}^{\Delta \prime}\right) \Lambda_{1}^{\Delta \prime-1}$ is an upper triangular matrix since both $\hat{\Lambda}_{1}^{\diamond}$ and $\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond}$ are lower triangular matrices. So we have
where lower $\{\cdot\}$ denotes the elements of the argument strictly below the diagonal.
Consider $R_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond \prime-1}$. By Proposition B.1, we have

$$
R_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1}=R_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t} \phi_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t} \xi_{t}^{\prime}\right) \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond \prime-1}+R_{11}^{\diamond} V \Lambda_{1}^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)
$$

where $\xi_{t}=\left(e_{1 t}, e_{2 t}, \ldots, e_{r t}\right)^{\prime}$. Notice $\phi_{t}=f_{t}-E\left(f_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left[E\left(g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)\right]^{-1} g_{t}$. So we have $R_{11}^{\diamond} \phi_{t}=$ $f_{t}^{\diamond}-E\left(f_{t}^{\diamond} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left[E\left(g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)\right]^{-1} g_{t}$, which we use $\phi_{t}^{\diamond}$ to denote. So the first term is equal to

$$
\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \phi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \xi_{t}^{\prime}\right) \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond \prime-1}
$$

The second term is $R_{11}^{\diamond} V R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}$ by $\Lambda_{1}^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1}=R_{11}^{\diamond-1}=R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}$. Then it follows

$$
R_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond \prime-1}=R_{11}^{\diamond} V R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}+\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \phi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \xi_{t}^{\prime}\right) \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond \prime-1}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)
$$

Given the above result, (C.7) can be written as

$$
\begin{align*}
& \text { lower }\left\{\left(\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}+R_{11}^{\diamond} V R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right)+\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \phi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \xi_{t}^{\prime}\right) \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond \prime-1}\right.  \tag{C.8}\\
&+\widehat{\left.\Delta R_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond \prime-1}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)\right\}=0}
\end{align*}
$$

By (C.6), we have

$$
(\widehat{\Delta R}
$$

Notice

$$
V+V^{\prime}=\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\varepsilon_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}-I_{r_{1}}\right)
$$

Then, by $\varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond}=R_{11}^{\diamond} \varepsilon_{t}$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
&\left(\widehat{\Delta R_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}}+\right.\left.+R_{11}^{\diamond \prime} V R_{11}^{\diamond}\right)+(\widehat{\Delta R} \\
&+\left(\widehat{\Delta R} R_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{\prime}(\widehat{\Delta R}  \tag{C.9}\\
& 11 \\
& \diamond\left.R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right)=\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond} \varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond \prime}-I_{r_{1}}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

For now, define

$$
\mathcal{V}=\left\{\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}+R_{11}^{\diamond} V R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}+\left[\sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \phi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right]^{-1}\left[\sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \xi_{t}^{\prime}\right] \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond \prime-1}\right\}^{\prime}
$$

By neglecting the smaller order terms $\left(\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{\prime}\left(\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right)$ and $\widehat{\Delta R} \widehat{A 1}_{\diamond}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond \prime-1}$, we see that $\mathcal{V}$ is an asymptotically lower triangular matrix such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{V}+\mathcal{V}^{\prime} & =\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond} \varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond \prime}-I_{r_{1}}\right)+\left[\sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \phi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right]^{-1}\left[\sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \xi_{t}^{\prime}\right] \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond \prime-1} \\
& +\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1}\left[\sum_{t=1}^{T} \xi_{t} \phi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right]\left[\sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \phi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right]^{-1}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $D_{r}^{*}$ be the matrix such that $\operatorname{vec}(M)=D_{r}^{*} \operatorname{vech}(M)$ for any lower triangular $r \times r$ matrix $M$, where $\operatorname{vech}(\cdot)$ is the operator which stacks all the elements on and below the diagonal into a vector. It is worth noting that $D_{r}^{*}$ is different from the usual duplication matrix since $M$ is lower triangular, not symmetric. Then taking the vectorization operation on both sides and noticing that $\operatorname{vec}(\mathcal{V})=D_{r}^{*} \operatorname{vech}(\mathcal{V})$, we have
$2 S_{r_{1}} D_{r_{1}}^{*} \operatorname{vech}(\mathcal{V})=\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left[\varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond} \otimes \varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond}-\operatorname{vec}\left(I_{r_{1}}\right)\right]+2 S_{r_{1}}\left(\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1} \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}\right) \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(\xi_{t} \otimes \phi_{t}^{\diamond}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)$.
where $S_{r}$ is the symmetrizer matrix such that $S_{r}=\left(I_{r^{2}}+K_{r}\right) / 2$, with $K_{r}$ being the $r$-dimensional commutation matrix such that $\operatorname{vec}\left(A^{\prime}\right)=K_{r} \operatorname{vec}(A)$ for any $r \times r$ matrix $A$.

Let $V^{\diamond}$ be the leading term of $\widehat{\Delta R}{ }_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond}+R_{11}^{\diamond} V R_{11}^{\diamond}$. It is easy to see from (C.8) and (C.9) that $V^{\diamond}=O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)$. So we have $\widehat{\Delta R_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}+R_{11}^{\diamond} V R_{11}^{\diamond}=V^{\diamond}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right) \text {. } . \text {. }{ }^{\circ} \text {. }}$ Then by the definition of $\mathcal{V}$,

$$
V^{\diamond}=\mathcal{V}^{\prime}-\Delta_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \xi_{t}^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond \prime-1}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

Taking vectorization operation on both sides, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{vec}\left(V^{\diamond}\right)= & K_{r_{1}} \operatorname{vec}(\mathcal{V})-\left(\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1} \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}\right) \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(\xi_{t} \otimes \phi_{t}^{\diamond}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \\
= & K_{r_{1}} D_{r_{1}}^{*} \operatorname{vech}(\mathcal{V})-\left(\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1} \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}\right) \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(\xi_{t} \otimes \phi_{t}^{\diamond}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \\
= & \mathbb{D}_{2}\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left[\varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond} \otimes \varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond}-\operatorname{vec}\left(I_{r_{1}}\right)\right]+2 S_{r_{1}}\left(\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1} \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}\right) \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(\xi_{t} \otimes \phi_{t}^{\diamond}\right)\right]  \tag{C.10}\\
& -\left(\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1} \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}\right) \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(\xi_{t} \otimes \phi_{t}^{\diamond}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

where $\mathbb{D}_{2}=K_{r_{1}} D_{r_{1}}^{*}\left(D_{r_{1}}^{* \prime} S_{r_{1}}^{\prime} S_{r_{1}} D_{r_{1}}^{*}\right)^{-1} D_{r_{1}}^{* \prime} S_{r_{1}}^{\prime} / 2$.
Now consider the asymptotic property of $\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\diamond}-\lambda_{i}^{\diamond}$. By $\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\diamond}=\hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond} \hat{\lambda}_{i}$ and $\lambda_{i}^{\diamond}=R_{11}^{\diamond} \lambda_{i}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\diamond}-\lambda_{i}^{\diamond} & =\hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond} \hat{\lambda}_{i}-R_{11}^{\diamond} \lambda_{i}=\widehat{\Delta R_{11}^{\diamond} \lambda_{i}+R_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}\right)+\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}\right)} \\
& =\widehat{\Delta R_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime} \lambda_{i}^{\diamond}+R_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-2}\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

Substituting the first expression of Proposition B. 1 into the above equation and noticing $R_{11}^{\diamond} \phi_{t}=\phi_{t}^{\diamond}$, we have

$$
\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\diamond}-\lambda_{i}^{\diamond}=\left(\widehat{\Delta R_{11}^{\diamond}} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}+R_{11}^{\diamond} V R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right) \lambda_{i}^{\diamond}+\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \phi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) .
$$

By $\widehat{\Delta R_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}+R_{11}^{\diamond} V R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}=V^{\diamond}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right) \text { and } \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \phi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}=\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right) \text {, }, \text {, }{ }^{\circ} \text {. }}$ we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\diamond}-\lambda_{i}^{\diamond} & =V^{\diamond} \lambda_{i}^{\diamond}+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)  \tag{C.11}\\
& =\left(\lambda_{i}^{\diamond \prime} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right) \operatorname{vec}\left(V^{\diamond}\right)+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Substituting (C.10) into the above expression,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\diamond}-\lambda_{i}^{\diamond} & =\left(\lambda_{i}^{\diamond \prime} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right) \mathbb{D}_{2}\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left[\varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond} \otimes \varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond}-\operatorname{vec}\left(I_{r_{1}}\right)\right]+2 S_{r_{1}}\left(\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1} \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}\right) \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(\xi_{t} \otimes \phi_{t}^{\diamond}\right)\right] \\
& -\left[\left(\lambda_{i}^{\diamond \prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1}\right) \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}\right] \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(\xi_{t} \otimes \phi_{t}^{\diamond}\right)+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

We discuss the asymptotic representations in two cases.
Case one: $i \leq r_{1}$. In this case, $\lambda_{i}^{\diamond \prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1}=\iota_{i}^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond} \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1}=\iota_{i}^{\prime}$ where $\iota_{i}$ is the $i$ th column of $r_{1} \times r_{1}$ identity matrix. Given this result, it is easy to see that the last two expressions are cancelled. Thus
$\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\diamond}-\lambda_{i}^{\diamond}=\left(\lambda_{i}^{\diamond \prime} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right) \mathbb{D}_{2}\left[\frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left[\varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond} \otimes \varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond}-\operatorname{vec}\left(I_{r_{1}}\right)\right]+2 S_{r_{1}}\left(\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1} \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}\right) \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(\xi_{t} \otimes \phi_{t}^{\diamond}\right)\right]+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)$.
Under the normality of $u_{t}$, when $\sqrt{T} / N \rightarrow 0$, we have
$\sqrt{T}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\diamond}-\lambda_{i}^{\diamond}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0,\left(\lambda_{i}^{\diamond \prime} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right) \mathbb{D}_{2}\left(2 I_{r_{1}^{2}}+4 S_{r_{1}}\left[\left(\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1} \Sigma_{\xi \xi} \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1 \prime}\right) \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}\right] S_{r_{1}}^{\prime}\right) \mathbb{D}_{2}^{\prime}\left(\lambda_{i}^{\diamond} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right)\right)$.
Case two: $i>r_{1}$. In this case, the asymptotic representation can be written as

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\diamond}-\lambda_{i}^{\diamond} & =\left(\lambda_{i}^{\diamond \prime} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right) \mathbb{D}_{2} \frac{1}{\bar{T}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left[\varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond} \otimes \varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond}-\operatorname{vec}\left(I_{r_{1}}\right)\right]+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} e_{i t}\right) \\
& +\left(\lambda_{i}^{\diamond \prime} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right)\left(2 \mathbb{D}_{2} S_{r_{1}}-I_{r_{1}^{2}}\right)\left(\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1} \otimes \Delta_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}\right) \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(\xi_{t} \otimes \phi_{t}^{\diamond}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Under the normality of $u_{t}$, when $\sqrt{T} / N \rightarrow 0$, we have
$\sqrt{T}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\diamond}-\lambda_{i}^{\diamond}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0,\left(\lambda_{i}^{\diamond \prime} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right)\left(2 \mathbb{D}_{2} \mathbb{D}_{2}^{\prime}+\mathbb{D}_{3}\left[\left(\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1} \Sigma_{\xi \xi} \Lambda_{1}^{\diamond-1 \prime}\right) \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}\right] \mathbb{D}_{3}^{\prime}\right)\left(\lambda_{i}^{\diamond} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right)+\sigma_{i}^{2} \Delta_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}\right)$.
with $\mathbb{D}_{3}=2 \mathbb{D}_{2} S_{r_{1}}-I_{r_{1}^{2}}$.

To derive the asymptotic $\hat{\gamma}_{i}^{\diamond}-\gamma_{i}^{\diamond}$, we notice $\hat{\gamma}_{i}^{\diamond}=\hat{\gamma}_{i}$ and $\gamma_{i}^{\diamond}=\gamma_{i}$. Thus, by (B.31),

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{\gamma}_{i}^{\diamond}-\gamma_{i}^{\diamond} & =\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(g_{t}-\Xi_{t}\right) e_{i t}\right)+W \lambda_{i}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \\
& =\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(g_{t}-\Xi_{t}^{\diamond}\right) e_{i t}\right)+W^{\diamond} \lambda_{i}^{\diamond}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\Xi_{t}^{\diamond}=\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g f}^{\diamond} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1} \phi_{t}^{\diamond}$ and $W^{\diamond}=\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}^{\diamond-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\diamond} \varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)$. By the similar arguments in the previous section, the above asymptotic results has an alternative expression:

$$
\hat{\gamma}_{i}^{\diamond}-\gamma_{i}^{\diamond}=\left[\sum_{t=1}^{T} \eta_{t}^{\diamond} \eta_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right]^{-1}\left[\sum_{t=1}^{T} \eta_{t}^{\diamond} e_{i t}\right]+W^{\diamond} \lambda_{i}^{\diamond}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) .
$$

Now consider $\hat{f}_{t}^{\diamond}-f_{t}^{\diamond}$. By $\hat{f}_{t}^{\diamond}=\hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond} \hat{f}_{t}$ and $f_{t}^{\diamond}=R_{11}^{\diamond} f_{t}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{f}_{t}^{\diamond}-f_{t}^{\diamond} & =\widehat{\Delta R_{11}^{\diamond}} f_{t}+R_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\hat{f}_{t}-f_{t}\right)+\widehat{\Delta R} \diamond\left(\hat{f}_{t}-f_{t}\right) \\
& =\widehat{\Delta R_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond} f_{t}^{\diamond}+R_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\hat{f}_{t}-f_{t}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1 / 2} T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Substituting the third expression of Proposition B. 1 into the above equation, we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
\hat{f}_{t}^{\diamond}-f_{t}^{\diamond}=\left(\widehat{\Delta R_{11}^{\diamond}} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}-R_{11}^{\diamond} V^{\prime} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right) f_{t}^{\diamond}-R_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} \varepsilon_{t} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} \boldsymbol{v}_{t} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1} g_{t} \\
+R_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i} \lambda_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
\end{gathered}
$$

First notice that

$$
\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}-R_{11}^{\diamond} V^{\prime} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}=\left(\widehat{\Delta R} \widehat{11}_{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}+R_{11}^{\diamond} \widehat{\Delta R} \widehat{11}_{\Delta \prime}\right)-\left(\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}+R_{11}^{\diamond} V R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{\prime} f_{t}^{\diamond}
$$

By (C.6), term $\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}+R_{11}^{\diamond} \widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond \prime}$ is negligible. In addition, as defined before, $V^{\diamond}$ is
 $\varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond}=R_{11}^{\diamond} \varepsilon_{t}, \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\diamond}=\boldsymbol{v}_{t}$ and $R_{11}^{\diamond} R_{11}^{\diamond}=I_{r_{1}}$, we have

$$
\hat{f}_{t}^{\diamond}-f_{t}^{\diamond}=-V^{\diamond \prime} f_{t}^{\diamond}-W^{\diamond \prime} g_{t}+\left(\sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i}^{\diamond} \lambda_{i}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i}^{\diamond} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

We finally consider the asymptotic result of $\hat{\Phi}_{k}^{\diamond}-\Phi_{k}^{\diamond}$. Notice the derivation of (B.37) does not involve any special value of parameters. So it still holds in the present context. So we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\Phi}_{k}^{\diamond}-\Phi_{k}^{\diamond}=\Phi_{k}^{\diamond} R^{\diamond \prime-1} \widehat{\Delta R} \widehat{\Delta l}^{\diamond \prime}-R^{\diamond \prime-1} \widehat{\Delta R}^{\diamond \prime} \Phi_{k}^{\diamond}+R^{\diamond \prime-1}\left(\hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}\right) R^{\diamond \prime}+O_{p}\left(N^{-2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \tag{C.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Notice

$$
R^{\diamond \prime-1} \widehat{\Delta R}^{\diamond \prime}=R^{\diamond} \widehat{\Delta R}^{\diamond \prime}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
R_{11}^{\diamond} \widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\Delta \prime} & 0 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right] .
$$

By Proposition B.2, together with the above result, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \hat{\Phi}_{k}^{\diamond}-\Phi_{k}^{\diamond}=\Phi_{k}^{\diamond}\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\widehat{\Delta R} \\
11 \\
R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}+R_{11}^{\diamond} V^{a \prime} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime} & W^{\diamond \prime} \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right]-\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\widehat{\Delta R_{11}^{\diamond}} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}+R_{11}^{\diamond} V^{a \prime} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime} & W^{\diamond \prime} \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right] \Phi_{k}^{\diamond} \\
& +\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{\diamond} \psi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{\diamond} \psi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(i_{k} \otimes I_{r}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $B^{\diamond}$ is defined by

$$
B^{\diamond}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
V^{\diamond} & 0 \\
W^{\diamond} & 0
\end{array}\right]
$$

By $\widehat{\Delta R}{ }_{11} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}+R_{11}^{\diamond} V R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}=V^{\diamond}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)$, we have

$$
\hat{\Phi}_{k}^{\diamond}-\Phi_{k}^{\diamond}=\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{\diamond} \psi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{\diamond} \psi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(i_{k} \otimes I_{r}\right)+\Phi_{k}^{\diamond} B^{\diamond \prime}-B^{\diamond \prime} \Phi_{k}^{\diamond}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) .
$$

This completes the whole proof.

## Appendix D: The asymptotic results and their proofs under IRc

Likewise in the previous section, we use the symbols without superscript to denote the parameters of IRa and the symbols with diamond to denote the parameters of IRc. We also use $R^{\diamond}$ to denote the rotation matrix, which transforms the parameters set $(\Lambda, \Gamma, F)$ into $\left(\Lambda^{\diamond}, \Gamma^{\diamond}, F^{\diamond}\right)$, i.e.,

$$
\begin{aligned}
z_{t} & =\left[\Lambda^{\diamond}, \Gamma^{\diamond}\right]\left[\begin{array}{l}
f_{t}^{\diamond} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]+e_{t} \\
& =[\Lambda, \Gamma]\left[\begin{array}{cc}
R_{11}^{\diamond \prime} & R_{21}^{\diamond \prime} \\
0 & I_{r_{2}}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{cc}
R_{11}^{\diamond \prime-1} & -R_{11}^{\diamond \prime-1} R_{21}^{\diamond \prime} \\
0 & I_{r_{2}}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{c}
f_{t} \\
g_{t}
\end{array}\right]+e_{t} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Using the way in deriving (C.1), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond} & =R_{11}^{\diamond \prime-1} \varepsilon_{t}-R_{11}^{\diamond-1} R_{21}^{\diamond \prime} \boldsymbol{v}_{t},  \tag{D.1}\\
\boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\diamond} & =\boldsymbol{v}_{t}
\end{align*}
$$

By $E\left(\varepsilon_{t} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\prime}\right)=E\left(\varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)=0$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{21}^{\diamond}=0 . \tag{D.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

By $\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond}=I_{r_{1}}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{11}^{\diamond}=\Lambda_{1}^{\prime-1} \tag{D.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Accordingly, we have $\hat{R}_{21}^{\diamond}=0$ and $\hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond}=\hat{\Lambda}_{1}^{\prime-1}$. Since we have already proved $\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1} \xrightarrow{p} 0$, then it follows $\hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond} \xrightarrow{p} R_{11}^{\diamond}$. We use $\widehat{\Delta R}{ }_{11}^{\diamond}$ to denote $\hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond}-R_{11}^{\diamond}$. Apparently $\widehat{\Delta R}{ }_{11}^{\circ} \xrightarrow{p} 0$. Furthermore, Since $\hat{\Lambda}_{1}^{\prime}=\Lambda_{1}^{\prime}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)$ by Proposition B.1, we have $\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond}=\hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond}-$ $R_{11}^{\diamond}=-\hat{\Lambda}_{1}^{\prime-1}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\prime-1}=O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)$. Now consider $\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\diamond}-\lambda_{i}^{\diamond}$. Notice $\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\diamond}=\hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond} \hat{\lambda}_{i}$ and $\lambda_{i}^{\diamond}=R_{11}^{\diamond} \lambda_{i}$. Then it follows

$$
\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\diamond}-\lambda_{i}^{\diamond}=\widehat{\Delta R} \widehat{11}_{\diamond}^{\lambda_{i}}+R_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}\right)+\widehat{\Delta R_{11}}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}\right) .
$$

Notice $\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond}=O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)$ and $\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}=O_{p}\left(T^{-1 / 2}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)$. So the above result can be simplified as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\diamond}-\lambda_{i}^{\diamond}=\widehat{\Delta R_{11}} \lambda_{i}+R_{11}^{\diamond}\left(\hat{\lambda}_{i}-\lambda_{i}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-2}\right) . \tag{D.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

However, notice

$$
\begin{aligned}
\widehat{\Delta R}_{11}^{\diamond} & =-\hat{\Lambda}_{1}^{\prime-1}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\prime-1} \\
& =-\Lambda_{1}^{\prime-1}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\prime-1}-\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}^{\prime-1}-\Lambda_{1}^{\prime-1}\right)\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\prime-1} \\
& =-\Lambda_{1}^{\prime-1}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\prime-1}-\widehat{\Delta R_{11}^{\prime}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\prime-1} .}
\end{aligned}
$$

The last term of right hand side of the above equality is $O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)$. Then we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\Delta R_{11}}=-\Lambda_{1}^{\prime-1}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}^{\prime-1}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-2}\right) . \tag{D.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

However, by Proposition B.1, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime}=V \Lambda_{1}^{\prime}+\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t} \phi_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t} \xi_{t}^{\prime}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right) \tag{D.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\xi_{t}=\left(e_{1 t}, e_{2 t}, \ldots, e_{r_{1} t}\right)^{\prime}$. Substituting (D.5) and (D.6)into (D.4), together with Proposition B. 1 and $R_{11}^{\diamond}=\Lambda_{1}^{\prime-1}$ and $\lambda_{i}^{\diamond}=R_{11}^{\diamond} \lambda_{i}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\lambda}_{i}^{\diamond}-\lambda_{i}^{\diamond}=V^{\diamond} \lambda_{i}^{\diamond}+\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \phi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} e_{i t}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right), \tag{D.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $V^{\diamond}=-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \xi_{t}^{\prime}\right)$ and $\phi_{t}^{\diamond}=f_{t}^{\diamond}-\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{f g}^{\diamond} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{g g}^{-1} g_{t}$.

We proceed to consider $\hat{\gamma}_{i}^{\diamond}-\gamma_{i}^{\diamond}$. Notice $\hat{\gamma}_{i}^{\diamond}=\hat{\gamma}_{i}$ and $\gamma_{i}^{\diamond}=\gamma$. Thus, by (B.31),

$$
\begin{align*}
\hat{\gamma}_{i}^{\diamond}-\gamma_{i}^{\diamond} & =\hat{\gamma}_{i}-\gamma_{i}=\left[\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right]^{-1}\left[\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(g_{t}-\Xi_{t}\right) e_{i t}\right]+W \lambda_{i}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \\
& =\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} g_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(g_{t}-\Xi_{t}^{\diamond}\right) e_{i t}\right)+W^{\diamond} \lambda_{i}^{\diamond}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) \tag{D.8}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\Xi_{t}^{\diamond}=\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} g_{t} f_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \phi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{-1} \phi_{t}^{\diamond}$ and $W^{\diamond}=\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\diamond} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{T} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\diamond} \varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)$. By the similar arguments in Section B, we have the following alternative expression:

$$
\hat{\gamma}_{i}^{\diamond}-\gamma_{i}^{\diamond}=\left[\sum_{t=1}^{T} \eta_{t}^{\diamond} \eta_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right]^{-1}\left[\sum_{t=1}^{T} \eta_{t}^{\diamond} e_{i t}\right]+W^{\diamond} \lambda_{i}^{\diamond}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

We further consider $\hat{f}_{t}^{\diamond}-f_{t}^{\diamond}$. Notice $\hat{f}_{t}^{\diamond}=\hat{R}_{11}^{\diamond 1} \hat{f}_{t}$ and $f_{t}^{\diamond}=R_{11}^{\diamond 1-1} f_{t}$. Given these results, together with $\hat{R}_{11}^{\Delta-1}=\hat{\Lambda}_{1}$ and $R_{11}^{\Delta-1}=\Lambda_{1}$, we have

$$
\hat{f}_{t}^{\diamond}-f_{t}^{\diamond}=\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right) f_{t}+\Lambda_{1}\left(\hat{f}_{t}-f_{t}\right)+\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)\left(\hat{f}_{t}-f_{t}\right) .
$$

The last term is $O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-2}\right)$. By (D.6) and Proposition B.1, together with $\Lambda_{1}^{\diamond 1-1} \lambda_{i}=R_{11}^{\diamond} \lambda_{i}=\lambda_{i}^{\diamond}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{f}_{t}^{\diamond}-f_{t}^{\diamond}=\left(\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i}^{\diamond} \lambda_{i}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \lambda_{i}^{\diamond} e_{i t}\right)-V^{\diamond \prime} f_{t}^{\diamond}-W^{\diamond \prime} g_{t}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) . \tag{D.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

We finally consider $\hat{\Phi}_{k}^{\diamond}-\Phi_{k}^{\diamond}$. Using the way to derive (B.37), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\Phi}_{k}^{\diamond}-\Phi_{k}^{\diamond}=\Phi_{k}^{\diamond} R^{\diamond \prime-1} \widehat{\Delta R} \widehat{\Delta r}^{\diamond \prime}-R^{\diamond \prime-1} \widehat{\Delta R}{ }^{\diamond \prime} \Phi_{k}^{\diamond}+R^{\diamond \prime-1}\left(\hat{\Phi}_{k}-\Phi_{k}\right) R^{\diamond \prime}+O_{p}\left(N^{-2}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) . \tag{D.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

By Proposition B. 2 we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{\Phi}_{k}^{\diamond}-\Phi_{k}^{\diamond}= & \Phi_{k}^{\diamond}\left(R^{\diamond \prime-1} \widehat{\Delta R} \widehat{ }^{\diamond \prime}+R^{\diamond \prime-1} B^{\prime} R^{\diamond \prime}\right)-\left(R^{\diamond \prime-1} \widehat{\Delta R} \widehat{ }^{\diamond \prime}+R^{\diamond \prime-1} B^{\prime} R^{\diamond \prime}\right) \Phi_{k}^{\diamond} \\
& +\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{\diamond} \psi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{\diamond} \psi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(i_{k} \otimes I_{r}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

However,

$$
R^{\diamond \prime-1} \widehat{\Delta R}^{\diamond \prime}=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
-R_{11}^{\diamond \prime-1} V^{\prime} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime}-\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \xi_{t} \phi_{t}^{\prime}\right)\left(\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t} \phi_{t}^{\prime}\right)^{-1} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime} & 0 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right]
$$

and

$$
R^{\diamond \prime-1} B^{\prime} R^{\diamond \prime}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
R_{11}^{\diamond-1} V^{\prime} R_{11}^{\diamond \prime} & R_{11}^{\diamond \prime-1} W^{\prime} \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right]
$$

Given the above two results, together with $\phi_{t}^{\diamond}=R_{11}^{\diamond 1} \phi_{t}, \varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond}=R_{11}^{\diamond \prime 1} \varepsilon_{t}$ and the definitions of $V^{\diamond}$ and $W^{\diamond}$, we have

$$
R^{\Delta \prime-1} \widehat{\Delta R}^{\Delta \prime}+R^{\diamond \prime-1} B^{\prime} R^{\diamond \prime}=B^{\diamond \prime}
$$

where

$$
B^{\diamond}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
V^{\diamond} & 0 \\
W^{\diamond} & 0
\end{array}\right]
$$

Thus,

$$
\hat{\Phi}_{k}^{\diamond}-\Phi_{k}^{\diamond}=\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} u_{t}^{\diamond} \psi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)\left(\sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T} \psi_{t}^{\diamond} \psi_{t}^{\diamond \prime}\right)^{-1}\left(i_{k} \otimes I_{r}\right)+\Phi_{k}^{\diamond} B^{\diamond \prime}-B^{\diamond \prime} \Phi_{k}^{\diamond}+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right) .
$$

This completes the proof.

## Appendix E: Proofs of the theorems in Section 5

In this section, we give detailed proofs of Theorems 5.2 and 5.3. The proof of Theorem 5.1 is almost the same as that of the equation (11.7.4) in Hamilton (1994). Hence this proof is omitted. As the starting point, we first give a theorem, which is closely related with Theorem 5.2.

Theorem E. 1 Under Assumptions $A-D$, when $N, T \rightarrow \infty$ and $\sqrt{T} / N \rightarrow 0$, under IRa, IRb or IRc, we have

$$
\sqrt{\bar{T}}\left(\tilde{\Omega}_{v v}-\Omega_{v v}\right)=\frac{1}{\sqrt{\bar{T}}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\boldsymbol{v}_{t} \boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\prime}-\Omega_{v \boldsymbol{v}}\right)+o_{p}(1)
$$

In addition, under IRc, we also have

$$
\sqrt{\bar{T}}\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}\right)=\frac{1}{\sqrt{\bar{T}}} \sum_{t=\bar{K}}^{T}\left(\varepsilon_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}\right)+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1}\left[\frac{1}{\sqrt{\bar{T}}} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t} \xi_{t}^{\prime}\right]+\left[\frac{1}{\sqrt{\bar{T}}} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \xi_{t} \phi_{t}^{\prime}\right] \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1}+o_{p}(1)
$$

Proof of Theorem E.1. Notice that $\boldsymbol{v}_{t}^{\star}=\boldsymbol{v}_{t}$ and $\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} v}^{\star}=\Omega_{v v}$. Then the first asymptotic representation is a direct result from (B.15). We then consider the second one. In this proof, we use $\Lambda, \Gamma$ and $F$ to denote the parameters under $\operatorname{IRb}$ and $\Lambda^{\diamond}, \Gamma^{\diamond}$ and $F^{\diamond}$ to denote the parameters under IRc. Notice that the rotation matrix $R$ which transform the parameters set under IRb to the ones under IRc is $\left[\Lambda_{1}^{-1 \prime}, 0 ; 0, I_{r_{2}}\right]$, i.e., $\lambda_{i}^{\diamond}=\Lambda_{1}^{-1 \prime} \lambda_{i}, f_{t}^{\diamond}=\Lambda_{1} f_{t}$ and $\varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond}=\Lambda_{1} \varepsilon_{t}$. Given this result, we have $\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}^{\diamond}=\Lambda_{1} \Lambda_{1}^{\prime}$. Accordingly, we have $\hat{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}^{\diamond}=\hat{\Lambda}_{1} \hat{\Lambda}_{1}^{\prime}$. Thus,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}^{\diamond}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}^{\diamond}=\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right) \Lambda_{1}^{\prime}+\Lambda_{1}\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime}+\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime} . \tag{E.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (C.11), we have

$$
\left(\hat{\Lambda}_{1}-\Lambda_{1}\right)^{\prime}=V \Lambda_{1}^{\prime}+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t} \xi_{t}^{\prime}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)
$$

Substituting the preceding equation into (E.1),
$\hat{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}^{\diamond}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}^{\diamond}=\Lambda_{1}\left(V+V^{\prime}\right) \Lambda_{1}^{\prime}+\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \xi_{t} \phi_{t}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1} \Lambda_{1}^{\prime}+\Lambda_{1} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t} \xi_{t}^{\prime}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)$.
However, as shown in Section C,

$$
V+V^{\prime}=\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(\varepsilon_{t} \varepsilon_{t}^{\prime}-I_{r_{1}}\right)+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)
$$

Given this result, together with $\phi_{t}^{\diamond}=\Lambda_{1} \phi_{t}$ by the definition of $\phi_{t}$, we have
$\hat{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}^{\diamond}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}^{\diamond}=\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T}\left(\varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond} \varepsilon_{t}^{\diamond \prime}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}^{\diamond}\right)+\frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \xi_{t} \phi_{t}^{\diamond \prime} \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1}+\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{\diamond-1} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^{T} \phi_{t}^{\diamond} \xi_{t}^{\prime}+O_{p}\left(T^{-1}\right)+O_{p}\left(N^{-1}\right)$.
This completes the proof of Theorem E.1.

Based on the results in Theorem E.1, we can directly derive the limiting distribution results in Theorem 5.2. Details are omitted.

Proof of Theorem 5.3. We first consider the impulse response function under IRa and IRb. Let $\mathcal{P}$ be the solution of the Cholesky decomposition of $\Omega$. Under IRa and IRb, by the special structure of $\Omega$, it is easy to see

$$
\mathcal{P}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
I_{r_{1}} & 0 \\
0 & \mathcal{P}^{*}
\end{array}\right]
$$

with $\mathcal{P}^{*} \mathcal{P}^{* \prime}=\Omega_{v v}$. The impulse response function of $h_{t}$ subject to one unit orthogonal innovation is

$$
h_{t}=\mathcal{P} \omega_{t}+\Psi_{1} \mathcal{P} \omega_{t-1}+\Psi_{2} \mathcal{P} \omega_{t-2}+\cdots=\mathbb{C}_{0} \omega_{t}+\mathbb{C}_{1} \omega_{t-1}+\mathbb{C}_{2} \omega_{t-2}+\cdots
$$

with $\mathbb{C}_{s}=\Psi_{s} \mathcal{P}$. Notice that $\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{s}=\hat{\Psi}_{s} \hat{\mathcal{P}}$. To deliver the limiting distribution of $\hat{\mathbb{C}}-\mathbb{C}$, we need to derive the limiting distribution of $\hat{\mathcal{P}}-\mathcal{P}$. By the structure of $\mathcal{P}$, it suffices to consider $\hat{\mathcal{P}}^{*}-\mathcal{P}^{*}$. By $\Omega_{v \boldsymbol{v}}=\mathcal{P}^{*} \mathcal{P}^{* \prime}$ and $\tilde{\Omega}_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}}=\hat{\mathcal{P}}^{*} \hat{\mathcal{P}}^{* \prime}$, we have

$$
\tilde{\Omega}_{v v}-\Omega_{v v}=\hat{\mathcal{P}}^{*} \hat{\mathcal{P}}^{* \prime}-\mathcal{P}^{*} \mathcal{P}^{* \prime}=\mathcal{P}^{*}\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}^{*}-\mathcal{P}^{*}\right)^{\prime}+\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}^{*}-\mathcal{P}^{*}\right) \mathcal{P}^{* \prime}+\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}^{*}-\mathcal{P}^{*}\right)\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}^{*}-\mathcal{P}^{*}\right)^{\prime}
$$

The last term is of smaller order and hence negligible. Therefore, we have (neglecting the last term)

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{vec}\left(\tilde{\Omega}_{v \boldsymbol{v}}-\Omega_{v \boldsymbol{v}}\right) & =\left(\mathcal{P}^{*} \otimes I_{r_{2}}\right) \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}^{*}-\mathcal{P}^{*}\right)+\left(I_{r_{2}} \otimes \mathcal{P}^{*}\right) \operatorname{vec}\left[\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}^{*}-\mathcal{P}^{*}\right)^{\prime}\right] \\
& =\left[\left(\mathcal{P}^{*} \otimes I_{r_{2}}\right)+\left(I_{r_{2}} \otimes \mathcal{P}^{*}\right) K_{r_{2}}\right] \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}^{*}-\mathcal{P}^{*}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

where $K_{r_{2}}$ is the $r_{2}$-dimensional commutation matrix. Let $D_{r_{2}}^{*}$ be the duplication matrix such that $D_{r_{2}}^{*} \operatorname{vech}(M)=\operatorname{vec}(M)$ for any lower triangular matrix $M$, where $\operatorname{vech}(\cdot)$ is the half-vectorization operator that stacks the elements on and below the diagonal into a vector. Then the preceding equation gives

$$
\operatorname{vec}\left(\tilde{\Omega}_{v v}-\Omega_{v v}\right)=\left[\left(\mathcal{P}^{*} \otimes I_{r_{2}}\right)+\left(I_{r_{2}} \otimes \mathcal{P}^{*}\right) K_{r_{2}}\right] D_{r_{2}}^{*} \operatorname{vech}\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}^{*}-\mathcal{P}^{*}\right)
$$

which leads to

$$
\operatorname{vech}\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}^{*}-\mathcal{P}^{*}\right)=\mathbb{W}_{2} \operatorname{vec}\left(\tilde{\Omega}_{v v}-\Omega_{v v}\right)
$$

with $\mathbb{W}_{2}=\left[D_{r_{2}}^{* \prime} \mathbf{W}_{2}^{\prime} \mathbf{W}_{2} D_{r_{2}}^{*}\right]^{-1} D_{r_{2}}^{* \prime} \mathbf{W}_{2}^{\prime}$ and $\mathbf{W}_{2}=\left(\mathcal{P}^{*} \otimes I_{r_{2}}\right)+\left(I_{r_{2}} \otimes \mathcal{P}^{*}\right) K_{r_{2}}$. By Theorem E. 1 on $\hat{\Omega}_{v v}-\Omega_{v v}$, we have

$$
\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vech}\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}^{*}-\mathcal{P}^{*}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0,2 \mathbb{W}_{2}\left(\Omega_{v v} \otimes \Omega_{v v}\right) \mathbb{W}_{2}^{\prime}\right) .
$$

Now consider the asymptotic representation of $\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{s}-\mathbb{C}_{s}$. By definition, we have

$$
\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{s}-\mathbb{C}_{s}=\hat{\Psi}_{s} \hat{\mathcal{P}}-\Psi_{s} \mathcal{P}=\left(\hat{\Psi}_{s}-\Psi_{s}\right) \mathcal{P}+\Psi_{s}(\hat{\mathcal{P}}-\mathcal{P})+\left(\hat{\Psi}_{s}-\Psi_{s}\right)(\hat{\mathcal{P}}-\mathcal{P})
$$

Again the last term is of smaller order and hence negligible. Taking vectorization operation on both sides, we have (neglecting the last term)

$$
\operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{s}-\mathbb{C}_{s}\right)=\left(\mathcal{P}^{\prime} \otimes I_{r}\right) \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\Psi}_{s}-\Psi_{s}\right)+\left(I_{r} \otimes \Psi_{s}\right) \operatorname{vec}(\hat{\mathcal{P}}-\mathcal{P})
$$

Let $\mathbb{D}_{7}$ be the matrix such that $\operatorname{vec}(M)=\mathbb{D}_{7} \operatorname{vech}\left(M_{1}\right)$ with $M_{r \times r}=\left[0,0 ; 0, M_{1}\right]$ where $M_{1}$ is an arbitrary $r_{2} \times r_{2}$ lower triangular matrix. Then the above result gives

$$
\operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{s}-\mathbb{C}_{s}\right)=\left(\mathcal{P}^{\prime} \otimes I_{r}\right) K_{r} \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\Psi}_{s}^{\prime}-\Psi_{s}^{\prime}\right)+\left(I_{r} \otimes \Psi_{s}\right) \mathbb{D}_{7} \operatorname{vech}\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}^{*}-\mathcal{P}^{*}\right)
$$

Under the normality of $u_{t}$, it is easy to check that the above two expressions on the right hand side are asymptotically independent. Given this result, we have

$$
\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{s}-\mathbb{C}_{s}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0,\left(\mathcal{P}^{\prime} \otimes I_{r}\right) K_{r} \Upsilon_{s} \mathbb{J}_{1} \Upsilon_{s}^{\prime} K_{r}^{\prime}\left(\mathcal{P} \otimes I_{r}\right)+\left(I_{r} \otimes \Psi_{s}\right) \mathbb{D}_{7} \mathbb{J}_{2} \mathbb{D}_{7}^{\prime}\left(I_{r} \otimes \Psi_{s}^{\prime}\right)\right)
$$

with $\mathbb{J}_{1}=\Omega \otimes\left[E\left(\psi_{t} \psi_{t}^{\prime}\right)\right]^{-1}+\mathbb{D}_{9} J \mathbb{D}_{9}^{\prime}$ and $\mathbb{J}_{2}=2 \mathbb{W}_{2}\left(\Omega_{v v} \otimes \Omega_{v v}\right) \mathbb{W}_{2}^{\prime}$.
Now we consider the asymptotic representation under IRc. Let $\mathcal{P}$ be the solution of the Cholesky decomposition of $\Omega$. Under IRc, $\mathcal{P}$ is of the form

$$
\mathcal{P}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\mathcal{P}_{1}^{*} & 0 \\
0 & \mathcal{P}_{2}^{*}
\end{array}\right]
$$

with $\mathcal{P}_{1}^{*} \mathcal{P}_{1}^{* \prime}=\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}$ and $\mathcal{P}_{2}^{*} \mathcal{P}_{2}^{* \prime}=\Omega_{v v} . \hat{\mathcal{P}}_{2}^{*}-\mathcal{P}_{2}^{*}$ is already given. We only focus on $\hat{\mathcal{P}}_{1}^{*}-\mathcal{P}_{1}^{*}$. By $\hat{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}=\hat{\mathcal{P}}_{1}^{*} \hat{\mathcal{P}}_{1}^{* \prime}$ and $\mathcal{P}_{1}^{*} \mathcal{P}_{1}^{* \prime}=\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}$, we have

$$
\hat{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}=\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}_{1}^{*}-\mathcal{P}_{1}^{*}\right) \mathcal{P}_{1}^{* \prime}+\mathcal{P}_{1}^{*}\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}_{1}^{*}-\mathcal{P}_{1}^{*}\right)^{\prime}+\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}_{1}^{*}-\mathcal{P}_{1}^{*}\right)\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}_{1}^{*}-\mathcal{P}_{1}^{*}\right)^{\prime}
$$

Neglecting the last term and taking the vectorization operation on both sides, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}\right) & =\left[\left(\mathcal{P}_{1}^{*} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right)+\left(I_{r_{1}} \otimes \mathcal{P}_{1}^{*}\right) K_{r_{1}}\right] \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}_{1}^{*}-\mathcal{P}_{1}^{*}\right) \\
& =\left[\left(\mathcal{P}_{1}^{*} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right)+\left(I_{r_{1}} \otimes \mathcal{P}_{1}^{*}\right) K_{r_{1}}\right] D_{r_{1}}^{*} \operatorname{vech}\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}_{1}^{*}-\mathcal{P}_{1}^{*}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

So we have

$$
\operatorname{vech}\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}_{1}^{*}-\mathcal{P}_{1}^{*}\right)=\mathbb{W}_{1} \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}-\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}\right)
$$

with $\mathbb{W}_{1}=\left(D_{r_{1}}^{* \prime} \mathbf{W}_{1}^{\prime} \mathbf{W}_{1} D_{r_{1}}^{*}\right)^{-1} D_{r_{1}}^{* \prime} \mathbf{W}_{1}^{\prime}$ with $\mathbf{W}_{1}=\left(\mathcal{P}_{1}^{*} \otimes I_{r_{1}}\right)+\left(I_{r_{1}} \otimes \mathcal{P}_{1}^{*}\right) K_{r_{1}}$. Given this result, we have

$$
\operatorname{vech}\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}_{1}^{*}-\mathcal{P}_{1}^{*}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0, \mathbb{W}_{1}\left[2\left(\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon} \otimes \Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}\right)+4 S_{r_{1}}\left(\Sigma_{\xi \xi} \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1}\right) S_{r_{1}}^{\prime}\right] \mathbb{W}_{1}^{\prime}\right) .
$$

where $\mathbb{P}_{2}=\left(I_{r} \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1}\right)+\left(\boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1} \otimes I_{r}\right) K_{r}$. Let $\mathbb{D}_{8}$ is defined as $\operatorname{vec}(M)=\mathbb{D}_{8} \operatorname{vech}\left(M_{1}\right)+$ $\mathbb{D}_{7} \operatorname{vech}\left(M_{2}\right)$ for any $M$ such that $M_{r \times r}=\left[M_{1}, 0 ; 0, M_{2}\right]$, where $M_{1}$ is $r_{1} \times r_{1}$ and $M_{2}$ is $r_{2} \times r_{2}$ and both are lower-triangular matrices. By these two definitions, we have

$$
\operatorname{vec}(\hat{\mathcal{P}}-\mathcal{P})=\mathbb{D}_{8} \operatorname{vech}\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}_{1}^{*}-\mathcal{P}_{1}^{*}\right)+\mathbb{D}_{7} \operatorname{vech}\left(\hat{\mathcal{P}}_{2}^{*}-\mathcal{P}_{2}^{*}\right)
$$

implying

$$
\operatorname{vec}(\hat{\mathcal{P}}-\mathcal{P}) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0, \mathbb{D}_{8} \mathbb{W}_{1}\left[2\left(\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon} \otimes \Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}\right)+4 S_{r_{1}}\left(\Sigma_{\xi \xi} \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1}\right) S_{r_{1}}^{\prime}\right] \mathbb{W}_{1}^{\prime} \mathbb{D}_{8}^{\prime}+2 \mathbb{D}_{7} \mathbb{W}_{2}\left(\Omega_{\boldsymbol{v} \boldsymbol{v}} \otimes \Omega_{\boldsymbol{v v}}\right) \mathbb{W}_{2}^{\prime} \mathbb{D}_{7}^{\prime}\right) .
$$

Notice

$$
\operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{s}-\mathbb{C}_{s}\right)=\left(\mathcal{P}^{\prime} \otimes I_{r}\right) K_{r} \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\Psi}_{s}^{\prime}-\Psi_{s}^{\prime}\right)+\left(I_{r} \otimes \Psi_{s}\right) \operatorname{vec}(\hat{\mathcal{P}}-\mathcal{P})
$$

Under the normality of $u_{t}$, it is easy to check that the above two expressions on the right hand side are asymptotically independent. Given this result, we have

$$
\sqrt{T} \operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{\mathbb{C}}_{s}-\mathbb{C}_{s}\right) \xrightarrow{d} \mathcal{N}\left(0,\left(\mathcal{P}^{\prime} \otimes I_{r}\right) K_{r} \Upsilon_{s} \mathbb{J}_{1} \Upsilon_{s}^{\prime} K_{r}^{\prime}\left(\mathcal{P} \otimes I_{r}\right)+\left(I_{r} \otimes \Psi_{s}\right) \mathbb{J}_{3}\left(I_{r} \otimes \Psi_{s}^{\prime}\right)\right)
$$

where

$$
\mathbb{J}_{3}=\mathbb{D}_{8} \mathbb{W}_{1}\left[2\left(\Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon} \otimes \Omega_{\varepsilon \varepsilon}\right)+4 S_{r_{1}}\left(\Sigma_{\xi \xi} \otimes \boldsymbol{\Delta}_{\phi \phi}^{-1}\right) S_{r_{1}}^{\prime}\right] \mathbb{W}_{1}^{\prime} \mathbb{D}_{8}^{\prime}+2 \mathbb{D}_{7} \mathbb{W}_{2}\left(\Omega_{v v} \otimes \Omega_{v v}\right) \mathbb{W}_{2}^{\prime} \mathbb{D}_{7}^{\prime}
$$

This completes the proof.


[^0]:    *Department of Economics, Columbia University, New York, NY, 10027; jushan.bai@columbia.edu
    ${ }^{\dagger}$ International School of Economics and Management, Capital University of Economics and Business, Beijing, China; kunpenglithu@126.com
    ${ }^{\ddagger}$ Department of Economics, Columbia University; 112582@columbia.edu

[^1]:    ${ }^{1}$ The Bayes method is alternatively considered (Doan, Litterman and Sims (1984), Litterman (1986), Sims (1993)), and by imposing some prior restrictions, the usual VAR model can accommodate more variables (e.g., Leeper, Sims and Zha (1996)).
    ${ }^{2}$ For example, Boivin, Giannoni and Mihov (2009), Bianchi, Mumtaz and Surico (2009), Forni and Gambetti (2010), Moench (2008), Ludvigson and Ng (2009), to name a few. Large dimensional factor models are also increasingly used outside macroeconomics and fiance, for example, Fan, Liao and Mincheva (2011) and Fan, Liao and Mincheva (2013) and Tsai and Tsay (2010).

[^2]:    ${ }^{3}$ See Bai and Li (2012b) for a comparison of finite sample performance of the ML and PC methods.

[^3]:    ${ }^{4}$ See Bai and Li (2012a) for an illustration on the sign problem.

